



Q

CIHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches.



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

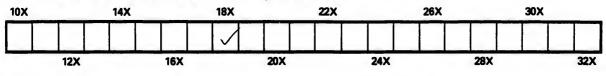


Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below. L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

Coloured covers/ Couverture de couleur		Coloured pages/ Pages de couleur	
Covers damaged/ Couverture endommagée		Pages damaged/ Pages endommagées	
Covers restored and/or laminated/ Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée		Pages restored and/or laminated/ Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées	
Cover title missing/ Le titre de couverture manque	\bigtriangledown	Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/ Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées	
Coloured maps∕ Cartes géographiques en couleur		Pages detached/ Pages détachées	
Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/ Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)	\checkmark	Showthrough/ Transparence	
Coloured plates and/or illustrations/ Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur		Quality of print varies/ Qualité inégale de l'impression	
Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents		Includes supplementary material/ Comprend du matériel supplémentaire	
Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ La re liure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la		Only edition available/ Seule édition disponible	
distortion le long de la marge intérieure Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.		Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.	
Additional comments:/ Commentaires supplémentaires;			

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/ Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.



Tł to

Th po of fil

O be th si ot fir

or

Th sh Tl w

M di en be riç

re m ire détails les du modifier jer une filmage

605

0

v errata d to nt e pelure, con à The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

National Library of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or :!!ustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \longrightarrow (meaning "CON-TINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:

1	2	3

L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

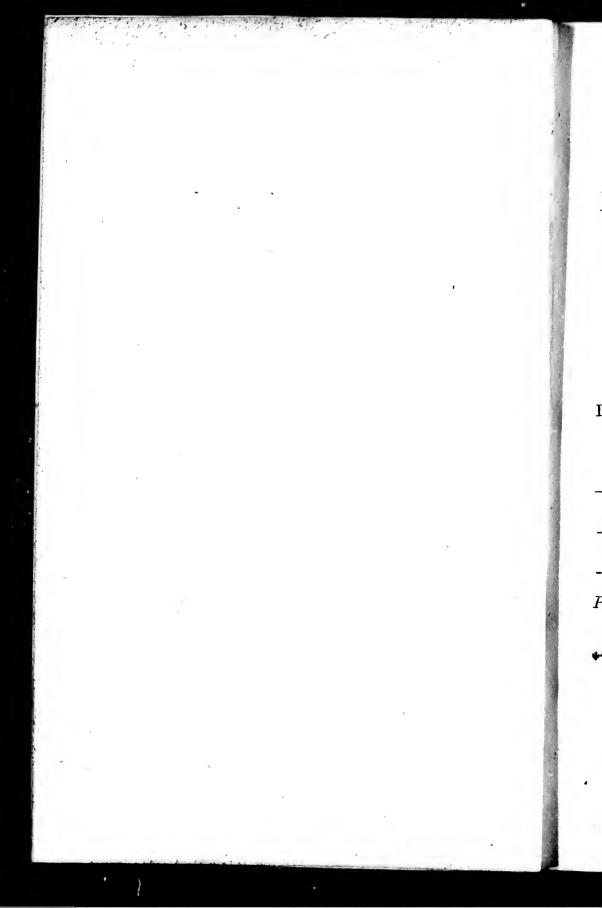
Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimé s sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole → signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ▼ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.



1	2	3
4	5	6



ТНЕ

ADMINISTRATION OF THE

BRITISH COLONIES.

THE FIFTH EDITION.

WHEREIN THEIR

RIGHTS AND CONSTITUTION

Are discussed and stated.

By THOMAS POWNALL,

Late Governor, Captain General, Commander in Clast, and Vice Admiral of His Majefty's Provinces, Maflachuletts-Bay and South-Carolina; and Lieutenant-Governor of New-Jerley.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Pulchrum est benefacere Reipublicæ, etiam benedicere baud absurdum est. SALLUSTIUS.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. WALTER, AT HOMER'S HEAD, CHARING - CROSS.

M.DCC.LXXIV.

192326 E195 P894 1-1-14 V. 2 . : 00

THE

A DMINISTRATION OF THE BRITISH COLONIES.

PART THE SECOND.

WHEREIN

A LINE of GOVERNMENT between the fupreme Jurifdiction of Great Britain, and the Rights of the Colonics is drawn,

AND

A PLAN of PACIFICATION is fuggefted.

To which is added,

A POSTSCRIPT,

BEING

REMARKS on the Penfylvania Instructions,

A N D

The " New Effay on the Constitutional Power of the Par-" liament over the Colonies."

WITH AN

A P P E N D I X,

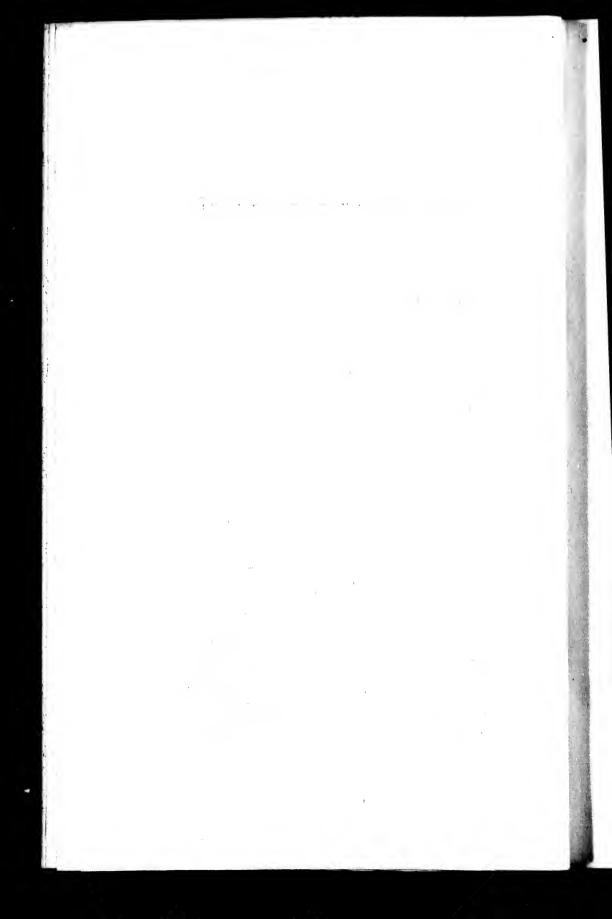
CONTAINING

PAPERS referred to in both the FIRST and SECOND PARTS.

M. T. CICERO, Orat. pro Balbo. §. 8.

6

Hæc Vis eft istius & Jur's & Verbi. UT FUNDI POPULI, beneficio nostro non suo jure start. Cum aliquid Populus Romanus jusiit, id fi eft ejus nodt, ut quibus dain Populis stve sederatis, store liberis, permittendum este videatur, ut statuant ipu, non-de nostris, stod de fuis rebus, quo jure uti velint: Tum utrum FUNDI sacti stat an non, quærendum este videatur. De nostra verò Republica, de nostro Imperio, de nostris Bellis, de Victoria, de Salute, Fundos Populos fieri noluerunt.



PREFACE.

(v)

CEVERAL friends, who have read, and approve, the opinions and doctrine contained in the following tract, doubt whether the prefent be the proper time for making them public. Although they think that if the fubject had been, at the first outfet of this bufinefs, taken up on this ground, many difficulties which we are now entangled in, and many of the evils which feem impending over us, might have been avoided; yet—on the matter of the iffue to which things are now brought—they doubt whether this, or any other reafoning which holds out a line of PACIFICATION, will have any effect at all, or even be read at this hour. -Whether this species of reasoning, com-

A 3

ing

ing from a Briton at the moment when the American hath advanced upon us, may not tend to encourage that fpirit which has already gone too far, by feeming to caft a doubt on the justice of the British cause.

Some think that a temper of COMPROMISE hath a betraying afpect, when it is oppofed to declarations, which renounce all fuch temper. — Others think that it may be hazarding too much, if it is not actually hurtful, even to parly when the adversary is lying at watch, to feize every advantage that can be made even of the hopes of conceffions.—

If I had not perfectly fatisfied myfelf as to all these doubts: nay, if I had not a conviction, fironger than all prudential confiderations respecting myfelf—that the publishing what I have here written, would have a *tendency to pacification*—I could have no motive upon earth to do it.—I feel that I shall not be approved by many of my countrymen; and I am fure I shall be extremely 3 n

h h

0

h

E

:d

h

1-

t-

is re

3

1

difapproved by the Americans.—Vanity can neither tempt my views, nor can intereft lead my hopes in this courfe.—Under the first confideration I do confess, as I fincerely think, That neither this, nor any other line of pacification, will at prefent take effect, or come into practice: But if there be not fome fuch in theory, in contemplation, that may by degrees gain upon the minds of men; our difputes must inevitably go to war, and our war (like an Indian war) to utter extirpation.

If we are to *treat*, there must be fome line to which our negotiations must have reference: If we are to *fight*, there must be fome line which shall bound and be the end even of our victories.

Some fuch line is neceffary: and as I do most steading believe that THE LINE OF COLONIAL GOVERNMENT which I have proposed in the following papers, is that of all others the nearest to truth, which is most likely, in the course of events, to be fallen A = 4 into—I cannot but think this the very proper time to publish it.

I own, that to parly, where the party doubts his own grounds, or his own fpirit, is hazarding too much: But where all is right, and fure within; when fuch parly proceeds from that confcious feeling, it may oftentimes produce good effects, which arms and force may deftroy, but not produce.

If moderation and compromife would lead to CONCESSIONS of our rights, or of that power which ought to maintain them, it becomes a feducing and a betraying fpirit. Nothing can be gained, but every thing may be loft by fuch conceffions. Yet furely explanations, defining on one hand those rights which you are determined to exert and exercife; and, on the other hand, those liberties which you do not mean to infringe or violate, but to fupport; at the fame time that it gives a proof of your juffice, marks your firmnefs; and is more terrible to the eye of (ix)

y pro-

party fpirit, all is parly ing, it which ot pro-

ald lead of that of that , it bet. Nomay be xplanarights d exeriberties or vione that ks your eye of an an encroaching adversary than even force itfelf; in the noise and tumult of which, justice and injustice may be confounded. Those alone, who have a bad cause, standing on artificial ground, may doubt that tone of truth which is in *the small still voice*: But this conduct is fit for him alone, who having justice on his fide, hath, as rectitude, so an unconquerable firmnes in his heart.

On the contrary, Thofe in America who have held the language and the doctrines, that there is no line between fovereign power (abfolute in all cafes whatfoever) and no power at all; that any modification of fubjection is equally difloyal and difobedient, as a total renunciation of all fubjection; have driven a people, already half mad, to utter defperation, and *bave given fource* to all the evils which Great Britain and America must experience.

There is danger, on the other hand, in the femblance of moderation, where, when it interpofes, it hath a tendency to divide. As As I could not but think that there was fomething which might have that tendency in the Penfylvania Inftructions, and in the Effay annexed to them; and as I apprehend that propositions of a fimilar nature may come forward with still more weight: I thought fome few remarks might be useful, fuch as may guard us against too hasty an adoption of preliminaries, which though they may offer, and really mean peace, might, without explaining the terms and conditions on which 'tis offered, entangle us in the inextricable grounds of differition and war.

I examine thefe by a line of Colonial Government, which none of those who are engaged in controvers, on the one fide or the other, will approve: I meddle not however with controvers, "* Verum enim in-" venire volumus, non tanquam adversarium " aliquem convincere."

I with the government of this country to define its own rights; and ftanding on * Cicero, de Fin. lib. 1. §. 5.

that

that fure ground, to acknowledge those of others. I wish the people of America, as they love liberty, so to honour true government, which is the only basis on which real liberty can stand: and in that line to see peace. In support of this, and to this cause, is the following tract, written in this dreadful crifis, DEDICATED.

November, 1774.

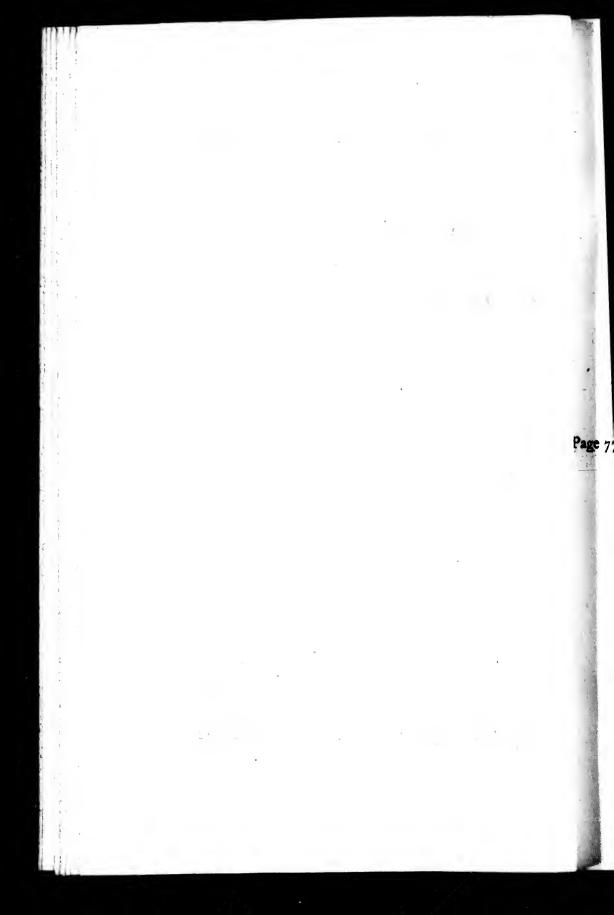
was ency the hend may t: I ceful, y an ough beace, and angle ention

Goe enor the hown inirium

untry g on

that

THE



ТНЕ

A D M I N I S T R A T I O N

OF THE

COLONIES.

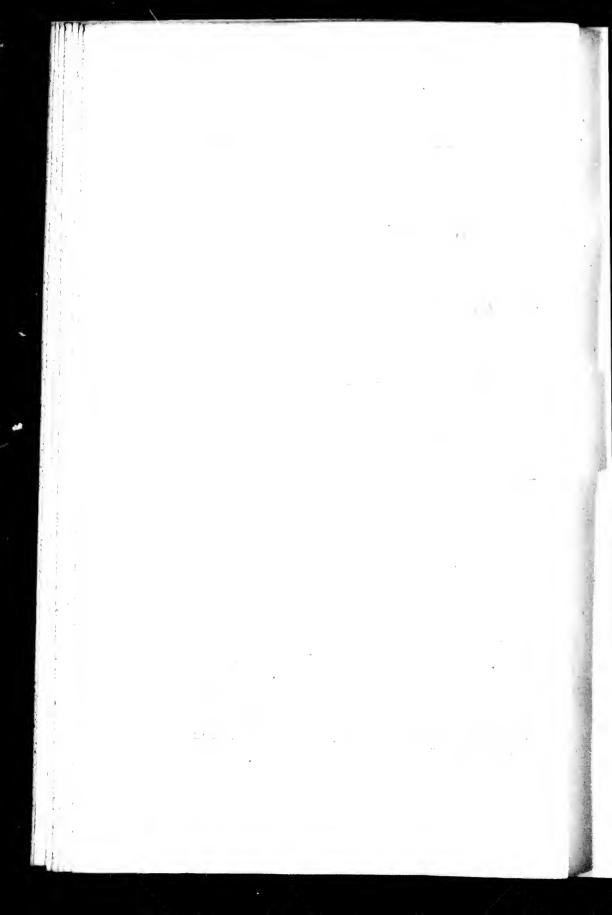
COND.

E R R A T U M.

PART II.

Page 77, line 6, for empire, read government.

his Book was written at the close of the last war, and published after the establishment of the peace. It defcribed the change which was taking place in the politicks of the European governments, from the commercial interests of their Colonies becoming fo active and important a part of the fyftem: It marked the crifis that was then coming into event; it fuggested reasons, arising from the nature of that cafe, why the government of Great Britain should begin seriously to confider of weaving these interests into the fystem of its administration: It even prefumed to propose measures calculated for the VOL. II. B obtaining



THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE COLONIES. PART THE SECOND.

HE former part of this Book was written at the close of the last war, and published after the establishment of the peace. It defcribed the change which was taking place in the politicks of the European governments, from the commercial interests of their Colonies becoming fo active and important a part of the fystem: It marked the crifis that was then coming into event; it fuggested reasons, arising from the nature of that cafe, why the government of Great Britain should begin seriously to confider of weaving these interests into the fystem of its administration: It even prefumed to propofe meafures calculated for the Vol. II. R obtaining

obtaining to the government of Great Britain fuch experimental and actual knowledge of the affairs and interefts of the Colonies, as might become adequate to the governing of them; as might give, at the fame time, to them fuch afturance and confidence in, by communion with, the fpirit of the government of the mother country, as should create that confensus obedientium which is alone the bond and tie of practical and efficient government. It confidered the state of the administration of the Colonies in those points in which the government of the mother country took the fupreme lead, direction, and controul over them. It examined how the fupreme controuling power of the government of Great Britain, in matters which respected the union, vitality, and fafety of the whole empire, had acted; what fystem it had established, what it should eftablish. The author did not, in the first editions which the book paffed through, enter at all into the disquisition of the state of that relation by which these Colonies, as external communities, flood connected with and fubordinate to the body of the Realm. -Convinced " how very unfafe a thing it " is in fettled governments to argue the " reason of fundamental conditutions *," I

* Commons Journal 1672.

ftudioufly

at Briknowhe Coto the at the id cone spirit ountry, lientium ractical ered the Colonies ment of ne lead, It exag power in matty, and acted; fhould he first rough, he state olonies, ed with Realm. hing it ue the s*," I

fudioufly and confcientioully avoided all the questions, in which I could not but fee this matter was involved.

As I faw an attention to American affairs ariling in the minds of most men of businefs; I was in hopes that these points, difpaffionately and deliberately confidered in the true spirit of council, might be settled on the grounds of prudence, and of real government, by those who alone could really fo fettle them. I own I was in hopes that that true fystem of efficient government, founded in political liberty (which all feemed to profess here) might be established in the Colonics: I was fure, from the temper and genius of the people in America (as they were when I knew them) it would be nourifhed and maintained there. I have had the chagrin to find, on the contrary, that from the moment in which American affairs became an object of politicks in this island, they became the tools and inftruments of parties: They have been taken up and acted in only on party-views, on party-confiderations. Inflcad of any general plan or fyftem of policy being applied to the governing them as parts of the whole; their particular plans have been applied to the interfering in our government, as this or that direction of their movements could be brought to add B 2 to

dioufly

to the momentum of this or that party bere. Hence it is that every mifconceived idea, under which the Colonists can be supposed to have emigrated, to have fettled, and on which their communities can be fuppofed to be established, have been taken up as principles. Every fleeting measure which the fluctuation and variableness of government, in the empiricism of its opinions for many years past, hath caught at, has been quoted as *precedents* of the true fpirit of government towards the Colonies. The conflitutions and the rights of the Colonies became thus unfettled : and parliament, as well as ministers, have been balancing in opinion, what is the legal and conftitutional mode of administration, by which the Colonies are to be governed : The Colonies, on the other hand, from a like fpirit, have fo often shifted and advanced the ground of their claim of rights, that the best reasoning of their truest friends, even the most active zeal of their warmest partizans, have fallen short in the course. Men having divided themfelves into various contending interests on the matter, the lines of their conduct have diverged into various curves of meafures, on each cafe, as it arofe and might be made to operate in our political difputes .--To defcribe these in their utmost divergings, one may fay, that one fide in the ardor of thofe

(4)

bere. idea. pofed nd on pofed ip as vhich vernis for been it of The lonies nt, as ng in tional e Coes, on ave fo nd of afonmoft have r dig inconmeaht be s.---ings, br of hofe

those exertions, which they have thought necefiary, have wrought themfelves up to the maintaining a fpirit of EXTERNAL GO-**VERNMENT**, which goes in its confequences to abfolute despotifin. The other fide, in the alarm and revulsion of their spirit against these supposed principles, have gone into a contrary extreme, in actuating a spirit of IN-TERNAL GOVERNMENT within their respective jurifdictions, which must train to absolute sovereignty in the Colonies, independent of the government of Great Britain. These various opinions, interwoven into the manœuvres of political efforts, came at length into actual discussion on the matter of prac-The queftions which arofe were no tice. longer of curiofity and theory: they were brought into iffue by deeds and overt acts. I then first proceeded, from the confideration of those principles, by the vigour of which all free communities are governed within themselves, to the examination and difcuffion of the external relation in which the Colonies, as communities of Englishmen, in partibus exteris, flood to the fovereign power of the kingdom of Great Britain.-I purfued this inquiry by an analyfis of the circumstances under which they emigrated, and of the principles on which these communities were in fact fettled.---I found them in fact, wherever the government of B 3 England

England interposed in their settlement, or in regulating their establishment,-to be de sacto & de jure counties palatine-I found them established on the precedent of the county palatine of Durham. I then, by an exact deduction of the procedure of the realm of England in respect to these kind of principalities, found that thefe were bound to perform towards the empire of England all SERVICES which arife from the duty of fubordinate parts of it, to maintain the union, fifety, and vitality of the whole: yet that in the cafe of AIDS AND SUBSIDIES, which are of free will, they could not, in the ftrict legal acceptation of their rights, be bound by the gifts and grants of the reprefentatives of the realm not reprefenting them *---and I produced cafes wherein, when they excepted to the being thus bound, they were held excufed and free therefrom.--- I found how-ever that they had in fact been bound by acts and statutes made and ordained by authority of the parliament of England: I found that imposts, customs, and port duties, raifing revenues, included in grants which the Commons of England and of Great Britain bad made to the King, were laid and impoled by those acts : I found that the King himfelf, in his government of these external

* Vide Appendix, Nº VI!. the Cafe of Chefter.

communities,

communities, was bound by the law and statutes of the realm respecting them; and by fuch as the parliament fhould from time to time make refpecting them. Although the King alone executed both external and internal government over these colonies : yet it was in virtue of that office by which he represents the whole majefty of the empire, acting without the realm, in like manner as he does represent it in its forderal acts and compacts with foreign states-I found the fubordination of the colonies to the fupreme authority of the parliament of England (afterwards of Great Britain) to stand exactly in the fame predicament with the fubordination of the counties palatine, and principality of Wales; which, before they had knights and burgeffes to reprefent them in parliament, were neverthelefs bound by acts of that parliament, as far forth as the other counties of the realm were, which had knights and burgefles to reprefent them in that parliament. As the procedure of government, both in its reafoning and acts, towards thefe palatinates and principalities, went to that remedy which was the true one, both in fact and right—namely, to the admitting them to a share and participation of power and will in that parliament, by admitting their representatives into it: I applied both the doctrine and procedure of this precedent to B 4

nt, or be de found f the by an f the kind bound gland ity of nion, : that which ftrict ound atives and I ceptheld howd by r'au-I: Iduvbich itain im-Ling rnal

ties,

the

the cafe of our Colonies. I endeavoured to deduce from, and to recommend upon the matter, fuch a fystem as might tend to form and establish a British union of all the parts of the British dominions into a one whole, an organized body, animated by a free-will, extending to all. "'Tis in their " legislature (fays Mr. Locke) that the " members of a commonwealth are united " and combined together into one co-" herent living body. This is the foul " that gives form, life, and unity to the " commonwealth." It was from this principle that I very ferioufly endeavoured to recommend an union and organization of all the parts of the British dominion; and the measure of permitting the Colonies (they retaining, at the fame time, all the rights and franchifes of their proper government, to all the purposes of internal jurifdiction) to fend knights and burgefies to reprefent them in parliament. By which, as this fort of government was a combination and union of the vitality and will of all the parts, its supreme power and absolute will might extend over the whole; and yet the whole remain, in every part, morally, politically, and abfolutely free. I very ferioufly recommended fuch a British union, as the only fure meafure which would prevent the certain alternative of an American union, diffinct from and independent of Great Britain. The true 4

avoured d upon tend to all the o a one d by a in their at the united ne cobe foul to the s printo reı of all nd the (they nts and to all o fend em in of goof the breme l over n, in abloended mealterfrom The true

true fystem of the British empire, as it lies in nature, is such an union—Nature kn ws no such distraction and separation of interests as the practices and powers of man have introduced *. But whatever may be the nature of things, whatever may be the true grounds of reason founded thereon; such are the systems of men in action, such their principles in reasoning, that the very attraction which naturally draws them together—creates in their spirit, when they are thus drawn together, a principle of repulsion, that is too hard for nature, truth, and right.

The first attempt which was made to eftablish a systematick subordination of the American Colonies under the fovereign and supreme government of Great Britain, confidered these Colonies as external communities; that is, as without and diffinct from the community of the realm; confidered them as fubjected parts, which, although they had no participation in the vitality and will of this governing community, were yet to be governed by its power. The meafure by which this fubordination was endeavoured to be established, confidered those communities as beings which were to be governed by the vigour of principles deriving from without ; although they were com-

* Vide Mr. Gienville's letter in the Appendix, Nº L munities munities having within themfelves a fpontaneity, and moral free-will. The attempt, therefore, inftead of attracting to, and uniting them in a one common center, has created a principle of repulfion, a fpirit of refiftance, which hath led, like another building of another tower of Babel, to the confusion of languages, and to the dispersion of the people.

I had conceived an idea of our Colonies as fhoots which the old tree, in the vigour of its health had put forth. I viewed them as fpreading branches of the fame *organized* plant, advancing in its natural vegetation : but I found, alas, this fystem to be a mere Our Colonies have, in practice, vifion. been confidered as cyons shot from layers. While they drew their fubfiftence from the parent flock, they have been permitted to ftrike a feparate root, the beginning of a new and feparate plant: they have been long nurtured and brought forward in this difinct fystematick organization, and have, occulto velut arbor ævo, grown up to a ftrength and magnitude which even bears fome comparifon with the old ftem. The parent tree begins to view these shoots as a separate plant, and with its over-topping branches cafts over them a shade rather of jealousy and mistrust, than of its old affections: the young fhoot in Ŧ

a fponattempt, nd unitter, has fpirit of another to the ifperfion

Colonies e vigour ed them ganized tation : a mere ractice, layers. om the tted to a new long is dihave, ength comit tree plant, sover truft, fhoot in

in its exuberancy feels itfelf as a feparate plant, and begins to find the old connecting layer as rather curbing and cramping, than as supporting its increasing vegetation. What, under this state of things, may be the proper culture for the future, is the purport of the following enquiries and disquisitions.

The British Colonies are to be confidered for the future, fince America as well as Great Britain will have it fo, although parts of the EMPIRE, yet as no parts of the *state*: although offsprings, and ftill British subjects; yet as external dominions diffevered and diffinct from that organized body, which is called the kingdom of Great Britain. They are to be confidered, fince America as well as Great Britain will have it fo, as removed from, and incapable of being admitted to a perfect participation in the legillature, the foul of the British dominions. The politics of Great Britain will confider them, for the future, as fubject to the King, not as fovereign head of a being, of which they are in part the body; but as fubject to the King, in bis parliament, as head of another being, of which the people, the communitas, the British realm, is the body; and of which body the Colonies are no ways parts, participants, and integrant. The politics of America, on the other hand, confider these external

external communities, each as parts of a political body, of which the King (as part) is the head: That therefore they are fubject to the King as to their oron head. How wide foever thefe two lines of reafoning may diverge from each other, yet both fet out from one point; namely, that the Colonies are separate and distinct communities without the realm. The one fystem of politics fays, that they are, as fuch, fubordinate in all cafes whatfoever, to the government of a fuperior fovereign community: the other fystem allows and admits of * a certain mode of fubordination, carried to a certain degree: and therefore fay, that if they are free British subjects, this fovereign must be limited; and that, although it may be difficult to draw the line of limitation, yet fome fuch there must be. I think that those are not to be heard, who affirm, "+ That no line can " be drawn between the fupreme authority " of parliament, and the total independence " of the Colonies;" because, " t if there

(12)

* Refolved, That his Majcfty's fubjects in these Colonies owe the fame allegiance to the crown of Great Britain, that is owing from his fubjects born within the realm, and all due fubordination to that august Body the Parliament of Great Britain.

Congress met at New York, Oct. 19th, 1765. + Governor Hutchinson's Speech to the Assembly, Jan. 6th, 1773.

‡ Affembly's Anfwer.

• be

" be no fuch line, the confequence is, ei-" ther that the Colonies are vafials of the " parliament, or that they are totally inde-" pendent." I fhall therefore, in this fecond part of my work endeavour, " how-" ever arduous the tafk may be, to draw a " line of diffinction between the univerfal " authority of parliament over the Colonies, " and no authority at all *."

It is from very falfe and artificial ideas of the nature of the political community of a ftate, from party reafoning on the nature of government; that fo many wild and im-

* If your Excellency expects to have the line of diflinction between the fupreme authority of parliament, and the total independence of the colonies drawn by us; we would fay, it would be an arduous undertaking; and of very great importance to all the other colonies. And therefore could we conceive of fuch a line, we fhould be unwilling to propofe it without their confent in congrefs.

House of Represent. of Massachusetts, answer to

Gov. Hutchinfon.— January 26th, 1774. If from the nature and end of government, the fupreme authority of every government must be limited, the fupreme authority of parliament must be limited; and the inquiry will be, what are the limits of that authority, with regard to this Colony. To fix them with precifion, to determine the exact lines of right and wrong in this cafe, as in fome other, is difficult, and we have not the prefumption to attempt it.

Answer of the Council of the Massachusetts, to Gov. Hutchinson. — January 25th, 1774.

practicable

erts of a (as part) are fub-1. How ning may fet out · Colonies without ics fays, all cafes fuperior stem alof fubree: and British ed; and to draw ch there t to be ine can uthority endence f there

hefe Coof Great ithin the Body the

h, 1765. flembly,

" be

practicable notions have been propagated on the nature of emigration and colonization. Notions which go to the diffolution of all government, and to the erecting as many of the parts of a flate, as in the *fpirit of repulfion* fly off from it, into diffinct flates independent of it. It does therefore here become neceffary, to recur back to firft principles.

(14)

I shall therefore inquire how an individual, or a number of individuals can separate themselves from the fociety, community, or government, to which they belonged, and of which they were parts. How, being thus feparated, they can become distinet communities, and in what relation of connection or fubordination fuch diffinct communities must fand to the community from whence they went forth. Different cafes arife, and very different conclusions derive, according as the nature of the community from whence the emigration goes forth, is stated to be; or as the regions, to which the emigrants go, and in which they fettle, are found to be circumstanced; as whether they be abfolutely loci vacui, or belong to fome other flate, or can be confidered as external parts of the empire of the ftate, from whence the emigrants departed. I shall mark the false conclusions as they derive.

gated on nization. on of all as many *it of re*ft flates ore here to firft

1 indivican sepacommubelong-How, come dilation of diffinct nmunity Different nclusions he comon goes ions, to ich they ced; as -, or bee confie of the eparted. as they derive,

derive, from falfe states of the case; and I shall then endeavour to state the actual case of the colonies of Great Britain, as they now stand in fact; although I think that state (as I have faid) an artificial one. Lassly, from thence I shall attempt a description of that state of government, which must operate between a kingdom, and such other communities as are esteemed, although parts of its empire, yet external parts, and without that kingdom. I mean to inquire what the government should be, rebus fic stantibus; fo that the unity, vitality, and efficiency of the

empire of Great Britain on one hand, and

the rights and liberties of the colonies (as

communities of British subjects on the other)

may be preferved, maintained, and fup-

ported.

The first case exists in that temporary fociety, under which the individual finds himfelf, from the nutrition which he receives from his mother, and from the protection under which the father brings him up to manhood. When he arrives at this state, the connection, and the law under which the *fon* stood, ceasing with the end effected and perfected, the united subordinate state of the fon becomes diffoluble. He hath a perfect right to emigrate from *this fociety*, to provide for himself, and to settle wherever he state of the s fhall find the means of fo doing. He therefore ftands *difunited from all union*; difcharged of all fubordination, and free from all government of the parental power. The obligations of gratitude, the ties of affection, are eternal, and must remain fo long as the parent lives; but thefe are the duties of the *inward*, not of the *outward* man, who is the object of government.

If two fraternal branches of a family, coexisting under a common father; or two independent equal individuals, leagued in a mutual communion of fociety, choofe to feparate from each other: the emigration of the one from the other, is a perfect difunion of all connection; a perfect difcharge of all claims from the one upon the other; and they immediately form two diftinct, intire, and independent communities. The above cafes exist in fact and right, and come into practice amongst the Indians of North America, * who are not yet advanced in the progress of human nature, to the forming communities organized by governments.

If there is any flate fo conflituted in the definite form of its dominions, and by the principles of its government, that these do-

* Memorial prefented to the late duke of Cumberland, Vide Appendix.

minions

le therelifchargfrom all . The of affecfo long ne duties an, who

nily, coor two ued in a hoofe to ration of difunion ge of all er; and t, intire, he above me into th Amein the *forming*

l in the by the hefe do-Cumber-

minions

minions are of a determinate unalterable extent and frame, so that it can neither receive addition to its body by accretion, nor can extend its foul (if I may here, after Mr. Locke, fo call the government of it) beyond these limited bounds of its realm : fo as that it neither posiciles nor claims any right of jurifdiction, over any region external to, and without, the body of fuch state : and if the government of fuch state is fo constituted, that it confiders its prefent component fubjects, or its future offspring, as connected and united to the state by their will and con*fent only*; then the government of fuch state being a compact or covenant, quod * actum babet transeuntem, which commences, and is diffolved at the will of the parties; emigration and colonization from a ftate, fo framed and conftituted, may take place at the mere will, and of the mere right of the emigrants.

If any ftate can be fuppofed to be of this conflitution, and of this frame of empire; then indeed the propositions ftated, by Dr. Burnet, and by Mr. Locke, are true and practicable; "That a fubject may put him-"felf under the protection of any foreign "ftate; that he may become naturalized to " any other government, by which his al-

* See Grotius, L. I. c. 3. §. 21. Vol. II. C ··· 1

" legiance

" legiance is transferred." " That being " born a fubject of no country or govern-" ment whatfoever, until by his own act he " connects himfelf;" he is at liberty to depart from any fuch government, only quitting those possessions and lands, by which alone (they being inseparably part of the community) he is connected to the state .---From communities thus formed, and that thus explain the conftitution of their government (if any fuch there be) the fubject is at liberty to migrate, and with others, of the fame right, to form distinct communities in partibus exteris, perfect and intire focieties, sui juris, independent of the state from whence they came forth.

The confequences as here drawn, may fuit the cafes from whence they are deduced : — but thefe are not the cafes on which we muft reafon—this is not the cafe of a community organized by government into that " confociatio plena & perfecta vitæ ci-" vilis cujus prima productio eft fummum Im-" perium *." It was not, in fact, the cafe of the Grecian flates, who have been fo repeatedly quoted, as examples in proof of this reafoning. They did not permit their fubjects, as of right and of their own will,

* Grotius, lib. 2. c. 9.

tò

vn, may are decafes on the cafe nent into vitæ cinum Imthe cafe en fo reproof of nit their vn will,

tó

to go forth and feparate from the community of the state - on the contrary, they decreed the feverest penalties agai 4 fuch It was indeed of the ipirit of defertion. the administration of their governments, to permit, as an act of the government, their fubjects to migrate and colonize. --And as they did not extend their imperium to the holding possession of dominions, without or external to the flate; fo whenever any of their fubjects, by permiffion implied or expressed, did emigrate, set down, and fettle in partibus exteris-if they were parts belonging to any other state-the allegiance of fuch fubject or fubjects, was transferred to that state, within whose jurifdiction they fo fettled; or if those external regions were in vacuis locis-the emigrants became fui juris-the colony became a new and perfect community of itfelf-began a new commonwealth, independent of the state from whence it came forth.

The question here then comes to its proper iffue*—Whether of right a citizen or fubject, can depart and separate himself from the community of an established state, without leave first obtained ?

* Solet hic illud quori an civibus de civitate abscedere liceat, venià non impetratâ. Grotius, lib. 2. c. 5. §. 24.

In

In order to state this matter on its true ground, we must review the nature and end of fociety, as organized by government : -and I cannot do that better, than by using the reationing and very words of + Grotius to this point. " Qui in civitatem coëunt, " focietatem quandem contrahunt, perpe-" tuam & immortalem, ratione partium, " quæ integrantes dicuntur. Unde fequi-" tur has partes non ita effe fub corpore ut " fint partes corporis naturalis, quæ fine " corporis vità vivere non poffunt, & ideo " in usum corporis recte abscinduntur. Hoc " enim corpus, de quo agimus, alterius est " generis, voluntate contractum scilicet-" ac propterea jus ejus in partes ex primæva " voluntate metiendum est, quæ minime " credi debet talis fuisse, ut jus effet cor-" pori partes et abscindere, & alii in ditio-" nem dare. Sic vicifim parti jus non est " a corpore recedere.

** Sane gregatim discedi non posse fatis
** expeditum est ex necessitate finis; quæ
** jus facit in moralibus, nam id si liceat,
** jam civilis societas subsistere non possit—
** de singulorum discessione alia res videtur,
** ficut aliud est ex subsistere aquam haurire

+ De Jure Bell. & Pac. Lib. 2. c. 6.

* Ibid. c. 5. §. 24.

" aliud

Mr. Locke + defcribes the civil organization of government as a *living body*, animated by a foul which gives form, life and *unity* to it.

By this principle, every individual that exists, or shall arise within the communion, is a part of it as of one whole; a member of it as of one organized whole: and is therefore, by nature and right, actually and indiffolubly connected with it, so long as that particular union and organization shall continue.

No individual or number of individuals therefore can, from a diffinct principle within themfelves (that is from their own will, and of their own motion) emigrate and quit the community, fo as to feparate and fly off from the fyftem. — As in nature the power of repulsion begins where that of

> † B. 2. §. 212. C 3

attraction

ts true nd end nt : --r ufing Frotius oëunt, perpertium, fequipore ut a fine & ideo : Hoc rius eft licetrimæva ninime et corh ditionon est

Te fatis ; quæ liceat, offit idetur, haurire

aliud

attraction ends; fo here in polity, any power in the individual to emancipate himself from the natural tie of this attractive principle, must necessarily introduce the principle of repulsion, to all the effect of corruption and diffolution.

As this attraction is that which gives unity to, and preferves the vitality of the community; the fpirit of government must be actuated by this principle, as continuing that union and organization.— To this, as to the final cause of government; to this, as the fupport of it, as a living principle, must all the lines of its power converge.

There may, however, many cafes arife, and many fuch have arifen, not contrary to, but confpiring with this true principle of government, when ftates may connive at and difregard the going off of certain emigrants; nay, may even find it for the health and well-being of the ftate, that fuch do fly off.

In cases where the departure of such individuals as generally do wish to emigrate, can be of no great hurt to the community, governments have constantly connived at, and disregarded such emigrations : they have rather considered such, as throwing off the particles power f from nciple, ple of on and

es unicomiuft be ing that to the as the muft

arife, ary to, iple of at and grants; th and do fly

ch inigrate, unity, d at, y have ff the rticles particles of a peccant humour from the body, than as fuffering any hurt or lofs in the community. When these kind of emigrations of individuals have taken place, without any circumstances which might occasion damage or diminution, or bring any mischief or danger to the state; the governments of all countries, have almost constantly acquiesced in, by taking no notice of them : but the individual has not thereby acquired any right, fui juris, thus to emigrate, otherwife than, and fo far forth, as the state of which he was a member, has fuffered a dereliction of its right to him. On the contrary, wherever governments have taken notice of these emigrants, as departing under circumstances hurtful to the state, they have always deemed fuch emigrant a fugitive, and his act of emigration as criminal *.

There may arife other cafes, in which ftates may permit even numbers, in whole bodies to depart from them. If a ftate bounded in its dominions, confined from the nature of its own fystem, in the form

* I might here eftablish this proposition a a fact in polity, by stating an invariable feries of examples and precedents, taken from the Roman and Grecian states; indeed I had so done, but finding it a matter of tedious detail, and that the argument requires not those aids, I have passed them by, and rest the matter on the spirit, constitution and practice of our own government alone.

C 4

and

and fize of its own natural body, feels itfelf loaded with a repletion of blood; it becomes a natural relief to it, to throw off part; and thus many ftates have done, by fending out fwarms of colonies. If a state finds itfelf too narrowly circumfcribed in the operations of fuch natural powers as have grown up within itfelf; and that there are objects of trade and fettlement without, to which, if it should fend fome of its subjects, although it cannot extend the limits of its own corporal vitality, it might, however, greatly strengthen and benefit its own internal intcrefts; fuch state will on this motive, (many have fo done) fend out colonies for the purpole of actuating fuch beneficial interefts. Yet the fending out thefe colonies, the fuffering thefe emigrations, must originate with, and be the act of the ftate; and must be conducted by and carried on, under the protection of the original ftate.

If states permitting or promoting emigrations, fuffer the emigrants to settle on lands belonging to other states—they suffer the allegiance of such emigrants to be transferred to that state.

If they fuffer them to fettle in *locis vacuis*, and to acquire a feparate *dominium*, they then els itself it berow off one, by a state ribed in wers as iat there without, its fubne limits t, howits own on this ut colouch beut these rations, t of the nd caroriginal

g emittle on ey fufto be

vacuis, they then then fuffer them to become a community, fui juris—which was the precife cafe of the Grecian Colonies.

But if these Colonists fettle on lands which in *partibus exteris*, are (according to the usage and law of nations) the dominions of that state from whence they came forth; then, although these Colonists should be permitted to form separate and distinct communities, to establish governments having *fovereign jurifdiction*, within the limits of their own corporation; yet being settled on the lands, and within the dominions, although external dominions, of the parent state; these colonies remain under a certain relation of allegiance to its general and supreme Imperium.

Let us now apply these principles, and this doctrine, to the actual state of the British government and British colonies: and from thence endeavour to explain what is that relation of allegiance, under which they are bound to the imperium of Great Britain; and what that species of sovereign jurisdiction is, which, confistent and coincident with the general imperium of Great Britain, they may and do hold, exercise and enjoy.

" Ву

" By the common law of the Realm (fays " Mr. Juffice Blackstone) every man may " go out of the realm, for whatever caufe " he pleafeth, without obtaining the King's " leave ; provided he is under no injunction " of ftaying at home. (Which liberty was " expressly declared in King John's great " charter, though left out in that of Henry " the Third :) but because that every man " ought of right to defend the King and " his realm; therefore the King, at his plea-" fure, may command him by his writ, that " he go not beyond the feas, or out of the " realm, without licence: and if he do the " contrary, he shall be punished for dif-" obeying the King's command."-The fact is, that the fubjects of this country, from the earliest establishment of its government, having connections with Rome, and the people, from the earlieft time, having been a commercial people, have exercifed this liberty of going abroad from ulage, time out of mind. But this going abroad was never confidered as emigrating, as that act by which the member of the community separated himfelf from and quitted his connection with the state. On the contrary, when this liberty of going abroad was fuffered or permitted, it was always under condition, implied or expressed, " * quod se non divertat

* Coke Instit. 3. c. 84.

τ

ad

lealm (fays man may ever cause the King's injunction iberty was n's great of Henry very man King and t his pleawrit, that ut of the he do the for dif--The fact ry, from ernment, and the ng been l this liime out as never y which eparated on with this lior pern, imdivertaț

ad

(27)

ad partes exteras fine licentia regis."-And that this liberty was to be enjoyed and exercifed under the limitation of these conditions, is plain from the statute of Clarendon, in the tenth year of Henry the Second, called the Affize of Clarendon, wherein, Facta est recognitio cujusdam partis confuetudinum & libertatum antecessorum Regis; And from the nature of the writ or proclamation, which the King hath of all times been impowered to iffue. And Sir Edward Coke, in stating the rights of the crown, and the cuftom of the realm on this head, grounds and explains it on those very principles of government in general, which I have above deferibed in the analysis that I purfued. Nay, if we had not feen, in the analyfis above purfued, how the governing power is bound to maintain the union and vitality of the state; an explanation of these proceedings in the actual exercise of government, in the reafons and ground of them, would have led us to the fame proposition. By whatever liberty, practifed or affumed, it is, that the fubject, as of right at common law, goes abroad, without asking or taking leave : no fubject does or can emigrate (in the proper fenfe and idea of that act) without the King's licence had, or supposed by his conniving at it. This power is lodged in the office of the fupreme migistrate, in the

the King "as the reprefentative and delegate" of the whole community in this act. From the King every British Colony, which went forth of the realm to fettle in partibus exteris *, had licence to transport themselves, their children, their fervants, and their goods, and to fettle in these foreign dominions of the crown, on lands which were to be holden of the King, his heirs, and fucceffors, Kings of England, as of the crown of England.—They were to remain under the protection, and in the ligiance of, and in fubordination to, the fovereign power of the crown, as here the delegate of, and reprefenting the whole nation.—This power of the *fupreme fovereignty* is expressly and specially referved in the very act of granting to them the fummum imperium of government, within the limits of their own jurifdic-Fact and reafoning, hand in hand, tions. hath thus led us to the actual state of the British Colonies-and mark that, as in fact,

* " Our anceftors, the first fettlers of this country, " having, with the royal confent, which we humbly

" apprehend involves the confent of the nation, and at their

" own expence migrated from the mother kingdom."

Address of the House of Representat. of Massachulet's Bay, Boston, Jan. 20, 1768.

The Defcendants of his Majesty's subjects in the realm, who migrated with the confent of the nation.

Their letter to Lord Shelburn, Boston, Jan. 15, 1768.

fa

nd delegate" act. From which went artibus exthemfelves, and their eign domiwhich were rs, and suce crown of under the of, and in wer of the and reprewer of the 1 fpecially g to them vernment, jurifdicin hand, te of the as in fact,

his country, we humbly and at their ngdom." t. of Maffa-768. h the realm,

n, Boston,

(29)

so in right, they are external distinct communities of Colonists, who migrated from the mother country, with the confent of the nation, and with the fame confent have fettled on lands, which are the external dominions of that nation - That they have thus emigrated, and thus fettled, with exprefs conditions that the individual should have, hold, exercife, and enjoy all the liberties, franchifes, and pre-eminences of Britifh fubjects-That communities, thus compofed of fuch individuals, should have full and perfect political liberty, both of jurifdiction and legislation, as far as * is confiftent with a fubordination to the fovereign jurifdiction and fupreme legislature of the whole empire. From the notions of this fubordination, which are generally current, it will be very difficult to form any idea of its nature, and of the rights derived from it. Great Britain fays, that it is not necessary, in order to give right to its power, that the fubordinate state should have any communion or participation of will with the will of the governing state. The Colonists, on the other hand, fay, that fuch an equal communion of will, as fhould give freedom in the exercife of it, becomes utterly impracticable, from the remote and feparate fituation of their local circumstances, rendered thus incommunicable; and that therefore, a fe-

* Letters, as above.

parate

ſa

parate legislature is an absolute right of a community of British subjects residing out of the seat of the empire. Here then comes in the question, * An summum imperium habere possifier, qui *inæquali fædere* tenetur. The colonists say, that "there never existed, "nor ever can exist, a state thus subordinate "to another, and yet retaining the subordinate "portion of freedom."

This prompt declaration treads on the deceitful and dangerous ground of general propofitions; diffinction becomes neceffary, when it is applied;—I fhall therefore go into a more precife examination of it.

"‡ So far as any thing is paffive, fo far agent, fo far it is free: for action and freedom are, I think, identical terms. The fpring of action is the felf-motive power, which is in animals fpontaneity, and in rational ones, what we call liberty." " || God which moveth mere natural agents as an efficient only, doth otherwife move intellectual creatures." Every being, moral and political, that is a free agent, muft have reafon and will, and

* Grotius, lib. 1. c. 3. § 21.

+ Meeting of Provincial Deputies of the feveral counties of Penfylvania, inftructing their affembly.

- [‡] Dr. Clark's Letters on Liberty.
- Hooker, B. 1. §. 4.

the

right of a efiding out then comes imperium ere tenetur. ever exifted, fubordinate he flighteft

s on the deeral propolary, when go into a

ve, fo far as it is an action and cal terms. elf-motive ontaneity, e call lieth mere hly, doth reatures." that is a will, and

veral coun-

the

(31)

the power of exercifing that in what we call choice. It is in the reasoning and will of the legislature, in the foul (as Mr. Locke expresses it) of the political body, that this freedom confifts and refides. How then the will of any fuperior governing being, (the governed having no communion nor participation in that will which acts upon it ab extra) can act towards this subordinate, without destroying its freedom, feems indeed, as the people of the Colonies fay, an arduous task, if possible, to describe. Arduous I acknowledge it to be, but not impoffible; and the difficulty which does occur, lies not in the thing itself, but in the tempers, with which men generally come to the confideration of it. These matters are feldom thought on, never ferioufly difcuffed, until the passions of parties call forth the discuffion-and then they never examine their own ideas, but oppose those of others —In the prefent hour there is (as the failors term it) a lull in the ftorm that hath been up-Before the next blaft, which is thickening black and heavy in the wind's eye, bursts down upon us, let us calmly and deliberately examine this matter; and begin by examining our own ideas.

Where Will refides it must be absolute. The will of a man is absolute over his own being : yet he is a free agent, because the spring

fpring of that will is within himfelf. "* The " lawful power of making laws to command " whole political focieties of men, belongeth pro-" perly unto the fame intire focieties." This Will of the fociety must be absolute over the whole body of the fociety, but being in the foul, the integrant felf-motive part of that being, the intire fociety acts only on itfelf, and is therefore free. As of the Will, fo of the executive part of fuch being, it may be faid to remain free, + dum rex ei præsit ut caput istius populi, non alterius populi, nam imperium quod in rege est ut in capite, in populo manet ut in toto, cujus pars est caput. Here then the government fpringing from within, the whole intire fociety acts from its own spontaneity, and by the vigour of the principles of its own nature. This government, therefore, I will define by a word, which precifely and effentially expresses that nature, and will call it INTERNAL GO-VERNMENT.

(32)

* Hooker, Ibid. §. 10.

+ Grotius, lib. 1.c. 9. § 8.

‡ Mr. Woolaston, Relig. of Nature, sect. 1. prop. 1.

" instrument.

" * The command igeth proes." This e over the in the foul, hat being, elf, and is fo of the ay be faid it ut caput nam imte, in pors est cafpringing ciety acts the vigour re. This fine by a yexprefles NAL GO-

ne opportfelf, and orinciple, effity inei præfit only an

1. prop. 1. Arument " infrument in the hand of fomething " which impofes the neceffity, and cannot " properly be faid to act, but to be acted." That Being which hath not, in its own nature, felf-motive power, is not an agent. That moral or political Being which hath not within itfelf these springs, and that cannot, of itself, act from the internal vigour of these springs, is not free. If the motive power acts from without, and if the Being acted upon has no communion in, no participation with, the will of the governing powerthis government may be called, as in fact it really is, EXTERNAL GOVERNMENT.

" The art of civil government (fays Mr. " Harrington *) is twofold; *national* and " *provincial*.

" National is that by which a nation is governed independently, or within itfelf.

" Provincial government is that by which a nation is governed dependently, or by fome foreign prince or ftate.

" Force is of two kinds, natural and unnatural. Natural force confifts in the vi-

In his Political Aphorifms.
 D

Vol. II.

" gour

" gour of principles, and their natural ne-" ceffary operations.

"Unnatural power is *external*, and ad-"ventitious, in opposition to the vigour of "principles, and their neceffary working, "which from a violation of nature is called "violence.

" National government is an effect of natural force or vigour.

" Provincial government is an effect of " unnatural force or violence."

What I have here above defcribed, gives the true ground of diffinction in nature and on principle, between INTERNAL AND EXTER-NAL GOVERNMENT: and I have the more particularly endeavoured to analyfe and mark this diffinction—becaufe it hath been of late a fort of fashion, even amongst fome learned men, and popular in general, to fcout all fuch diffinction and its confequences, as groundlefs and ridiculous.

However, when I come to confider that fyftem, by which the British Colonies (if they must be held as distinct external communities) are to be governed; the line of my reasoning runs not in either of these diametrically natural ne-

, and advigour of working, re is called

fect of na-

1 effect of

bed, gives cure and on D EXTERthe more and mark een of late ne learned fcout all ences, as

fider that lonies (if inal comine of my diametrically

cally opposite courses. I neither think that government (free and fovereign as it may be, within the limits of its own jurifdiction) which is given to the Colonies, and by which they act, national and independent : nor can I ever admit, that the imperium, by which Great Britain doth of right govern her Colonies, is provincial; is that unnatural force or violence, which, being intirely external, must place the governed in a state of absolute flavery *. I do not believe that Great Britain wifnes or means to act by provincial government towards the Colonies : nor do the Colonies, in fact (fpeaking of what was the general fpirit of them) aim to eftablish a feparate independence by national government. Both the one and the other, however, have advanced their claims, and even their acts, beyond that line, which, in right and policy, is the true boundary between them. The fpirit of difpute hath wrought up in each fears, jealousies, and fuspicions, that neither the one nor the other will think themfelves fafe, unlefs they have each fome advanced fortified posts, even beyond the line of their boundary. When this line is rightly underftood, that understanding may give a confidence which shall become the true ground of pacification.

* Beneficio quàm metu obligare homines malit; exteralque gentes fide ac focietate junctas habere, quàm trifti fuljectas fervitio. Liv. Lib. 25. § 49.

D 2

I think

· · · · ·

I think *this line* by nature, and in principle, is plainly to be marked on the true grounds of policy, between the two extremes above defcribed; and that between *national and provincial* government, there is a mixed or COLONIAL GOVERNMENT.

Colonial government, fo far as it refpects the acts of the Colony operating within its own jurifdiction, on its own body, and in matters refpecting its own rights only, is *internal*, and as fuch, and fo far forth, abfolute and fovereign. It is, fo far as refpects its own jurifdiction, within its own community, national, though not independent. It cannot be independent, becaufe fo far as it is a part (under a peculiar flate of organization) of the whole empire of Great Britain, it is fubordinate.

Where a people or colony is permitted to go forth (and without fuch permiffion, as is feen above, it cannot go forth) and to form, *in partibus exteris*, a diftinct and intire community; and where that community confifts of individuals, perfons who have the rights, liberties, and franchifes of British subjects, they have, "* carrying with them the laws " of the land wherever they form colonies," a right to political liberty, as far as is con-

* Pratt and York.

fistent

(37)

in printhe true two exbetween there is a

efpects the in its own in matters *ternal*, and te and fots its own unity, na-It cannot it is a part zation) of it is fub-

rmitted to lion, as is l to form, *re commu*confifts of le rights, fubjects, l the laws colonies," s is con-

fiftent

fistent with the vital unity, efficiency, and falus fuprema of the imperium of the fovereign state. They have a right to have, hold, and to enjoy, within the body of that Colony, a free government of the like rights, jurifdictions, and pre-eminences, as they did enjoy within the flate from whence the colony emigrated. They have a right to enjoy the like power of reafoning and will in a fimilar legiflature; a like judicature, and like executive powers, fo far as refpects their interior rights, within the bounds of their corporation, as the government of the mother country hath within its realm. In fhort, the Colony hath a right, as a politically free Being, to all those internal powers, which are effential to its being a free agent.

On the other hand, the *fupreme fovereign power* of the mother country hath a right to actuate and exert, even up to the very bounds of the line of the jurifdiction of the colonies, provincial or external government. All the laws which it hath made, either those of ftate for the maintenance of its own rights, or those which are *maritime*, and commercial, for the regulation of the rights of its subjects, without the realm, and not within any colony, are of this spirit.—The moment that any British subject, or the property of any British subject. comes

 D_{3}

forth,

forth, without the line of its colonial jurifdiction; and is not yet within the realm of Great Britain-it is under the jurifdiction of this external government. The moment that it paffes the line which bounds the jurifdiction of the colony, it is no longer in the jurifdiction nor under the protection of its own government; it enters the actually exercised jurifdiction, and comes under the immediate protection of the government of the kingdom. Where the one ends, the other must begin.-It is, therefore, on this actual state of the cafe, that the supreme government hath a right to exercise and exert upon this line its whole and fovereign power : it is on this actual state of the case, that the government of Great Britain hath the fame right as all other governments have, hold, exercife and enjoy, to make all regulations whatfoever, and to impose all fuch duties and cuftoms, on the transit of goods, passing the boundaries of its jurifdiction, as the cconomy and neceffities of the ftate fhall require.-This right, even exercifed, does not interfere with any rights or franchifes which the Colonists have, or can enjoy, equally with any other his Majesty's subjects of the realm-And yet, fo far as refpects the Colonies, this is external, or provincial government. There is also even in the internal government, which the Colonies have a right

(38)

nial jurife realm of urifdiction e moment ds the juo longer in stection of e actually under the rnment of , the other this actual e governexert upon power: it that the 1 the fame ave, hold, egulations ich duties ds, passing n, as the state shall ifed, does franchifes an enjoy, 's fubjects s refpects provincial n the inonies have a right

a right to, and to enjoy, a mixture of external government.-For first the whole body of the government must remain and act as fubordinate to the government of the mother country.-The King alfo even in his administring the powers of their internal government, by himfelf, or his lieutenant, must conform this his administration not only to the laws of the Colonies, but to fuch laws of the mother country, as shall from time to time be made for the regulation and controul of them: for it is the parliament alone that can fuperintend the mode of their government. The King, or in the language of our conftitution, those ministers who advife him, and inftruct his lieutenant the governor, are amenable to the laws and parliament of the fupreme government. He cannot do, nor by his authority permit, any thing to be done, contrary to the laws or majefty of the government of Great Britain. The legiflature is bound, as it did establish, fo to fupport his majefty's government : and in all cafes of difficulty, to which the actual powers of the crown do not regularly extend, the king must apply to parliament for fuch support.

There may arife cafes in which the fupreme power of parliament ought, at its own inftance, to interpose. If either the D 4 King, King, or the people of the Colonies, should adopt any principles, or take any measures which tend to a difmembering of the empire; if the King should confider the lands as belonging to himfelf perfonally, in his feignoral right, diffinct from the right which the state has in them; if the Colonists should conftrue their right of property, as deriving from any power or right, independent of the property which the community had in them; if the king should confider the people of the Colonies as his fubjects, in his foreign feignoral dominions; if the people should aim to confider the king as their feigneur, ut caput fui populi; if they advance beyond the bounds of their jurifdiction, and there affume to act; and in act to impede or repel the will and exercise of the fupreme and fovereign government of the mother country;—if they thus ceafe to act as Colonies, they render it necessary, and a duty in the fovereign power of the fupreme government, to act towards them as Provinces, and to govern them by external or provincial government, which is force, as above described.

If they difpute the grounds of their fubordination; and reject those regulations by which their acts and interests are to be governed; if they withold intentionally, or from , fhould measures empire; ds as bes seignohich the s should deriving ndent of y had in the peo-, in his e people as their they adjurifdicin act to e of the t of the fe to act , and a fupreme as Proernal or prce, as

eir fubions by be golly, or from (41)

from difficulties as to quotas, &c. that aid and duty which they are bound to afford, and pay, to the maintaining the fafety and defence of the whole empire; if they attempt to form politive alliances, or hold fecret connections, either in their fæderal or commercial capacity, with foreign states, in direct violation of the laws, and to the hurt of the majesty of the supreme empire; if they prefume to do acts fæderal, or acts of hoftility, independent of the government of the mother country—the government has not only a natural, but an * express right, to put them out of its protection, to reduce them to provinces (in the fenfe C Roman provinces) fuperceding that inal government wherein and whereby they before acted as political free agents. This is the true intent and meaning of the act of parliament, which declares the right of parliament to make laws binding upon the Colonies, in all cafes what foever; which refers only to cafes of neceffity, and not to the wantonly and arbitrarily interfering with, or fuperceding that political liberty; which they have, fo long as they do not misuse it, an absolute and indefeasible right to have, hold, use, exercise, and enjoy. While they perform their duty of aid and

* This is an express and positive flipulation, even in the Charters of the greatest latitude of liberty.

fervice

fervice to the fupreme government, in return for the protection they receive from and within its empire: while, being permitted to act and trade (out of their own jurifdiction) within and under the protection of this empire, they conform to its laws and acts of trade: while they fubmit to pay every tax, which the will of the fupreme legiflature (not interfering with the free-will of the internal colonial government) lays on all property being within, or passing through, its jurifdiction, and under the protection of its empire : while those communities remain in that relation, under which they were fettled, and are eftabl.fhed, as British colonies having within themfelves political freedom — these colonies have a right to be governed within this jurifdiction by their own laws, made by their own internal will; and to give and grant their own money, in those subsidies which are of goodwill, to all the intents, extents, and purpofes of a free government.—So long as they are, and act as legally and conftitutionally eftablifhed—it would be against the law of nature, of nations, of our own conflitution, if even the omnipotence of parliament itfelf was to interfere to the obstructing or fuperceding their freedom. The Supreme Governor of the world, whofe abfolute power goes over all his works, breaks not in upon the

(42

)

ent, in receive from being pertheir own protection ts laws and nit to pay upreme lebe free-will nt) lays on g through, otection of unities rehich they as British es political a right to liction by wn intertheir own e of goodd purpofes s they are, hally eftaaw of nanititution, ament itucting or Supreme ute power t in upon the

(43)

the free-will of man; He leaves him fovereign and absolute in the internal government of his own human fystem. This external part of the mixed colonial government, necessary to the union of the empire, to the vitality of the state, and to the efficiency of its government, lies in the first principles of right, as founded in the nature and end of that government, by which an empire fo conftituted, is organized.-It is neceffary to the fafety of the empire, that fuch a power should, like the palladium, be lodged in the most fecret and facred adyta of the state. Nothing but extreme necessity, nè quid detrimenti capiat respublica, should as in the last resource call this forth — as the dictatorial, or extraordinary exertion of the cenforial powers were called forth :----an or-dinary exertion of these powers of external government would have been tyranny; they were not, therefore, lodged in the fupreme magistrate, but resided in the majesty of the people. Although this fimilar centorial or dictatorial power does, in the theory of our constitution, in the intendment and remembrance of the law (as above explained) go to all cafes whatfoever : yet if ever it fhould be exerted, as an ordinary power, except in that extreme neceffity, where alone it could prevent a difmembering of the state, a subvertion of government, or a total diffolution of the

the community of the empire, it would be in like manner tyranny. It is neceffary that fome fuch *remedial power* fhould refide fomewhere in the empire. In an empire, having a conftitution like ours, it can refide no where but in parliament. As in the Roman ftate, the political liberty of the government was fafe, in that these powers could not be exercised, but *juffu populi*: fo is it the best fafety, and fecurity, that the liberties of America can have, that this power is not lodged in the crown, but refides in parliament alone.

(44)

This power breaks not in upon the freedom of the Colonifts; interferes not with, nor obftructs the political liberty of the Colonies : Becaufe it can act only where and when all fuch are already broken in upon, or diffolved; or where, as remedial, it may prevent fuch fubverfion of rights, and fuch diffolution of government.——This right, therefore, infringing no rights, liberties, or franchifes of the individual, and not interfering with the freedom of the conftitution of the Colonies, while fuch remain fixed in, and actuated by, their fundamental principles—but on the other hand, neceffary to \uparrow the fupreme fuperintending legiflature of

+ Boston Letters, as before.

the

it would be eceffary that refide fomenpire, havin refide no the Roman government ould not be it the beft liberties of ower is not in parlia-

n the freenot with, of the Cowhere and in upon, ial, it may and fuch this right, berties, or not interonftitution n fixed in, tal princiceffary to iflature of the whole empire—is, to the utmost extent and intent of the claims as stated by the Colonies, consistent with the fundamental rights of nature and the constitution, and leaves the legislature of the Colonies, to express it in the words of their own claim, "* as perfectly free as a fubordination will " admit.

If this line of colonial government, thus found just and fafe in Theory, should, when applied to the actual state of the constitution of the Colonies, prove conformable to Fast as established on right, This may, This is the only one that can become A LINE OF PACI-FICATION. We will then try it by fact.

It is in fubordination to a mixed imperium of *colonial government*, thus bounded and limited in the procefs of its own operations, and by its own acts, that our Colonies (confidered as British fettlements of British fubjects) + do carry with them, wherever they go, under his Majesty's protection, *the laws of the land*; namely, the common law, and all statutes confirmatory of it; whereby they " \pm have, hold and enjoy all liberties " and immunities of free and natural fub-" jects, to all intents, constructions, and

* Boston Letters, as before.

- † Pratt and York.
- ‡ General words in all the charters.

the

" purpofes whatfoever, as if they and every " of them were born within the realm;" and they are bound by the like allegiance as every other fubject of the realm is. Hence it is, as the Colonifts themfelves express it,

(46)

that they have a right to a "* full enjoyment "of the rights of the conftitution upon which government itfelf is formed, and by which "fovereignty and allegiance are afcertained; "that is, as full an enjoyment, as is con-"fiftent with a fubordinate government, "and a + fubordinate legiflation."

Hence, therefore, it is, that all flatutes touching the right of the fucceflion, and parliamentary fettlement of the crown, with the flatutes of treafon relating thereto, do, from the very nature of the fubordination and allegiance above admitted, *extend to all Britifb Colonies and plantations*.

From the rights of the Colonifts, and from the conflictions of the Colonies, as above explained, it is that all ftatutes regulating or limiting the general powers and authority of the crown, and the exercise of the jurisdiction thereof; all flatutes, declaratory of the rights and liberty of the fubject; do extend to all British subjects in the Plantations or Colonies, as of common right,

and

^{*} Bofton Letters, p. 13. + P. 47, 48.

d every realm;" egiance Hence prefs it, oyment n which y which tained; is conment,

ftatutes on, and n, with to, do, ination d to all

s, and ies, as regurs and cife of declae fubin the right, (47)

and as if they and every of them were born within the realm. Hence it is, that the rights of the fubject as declared in the petition of rights; the limitation of the prerogative by the act for abolishing the Starchamber, and for regulating the Privy Council; the Habeas Corpus act; and the Bill of Rights; do of common right extend to and are in force within faid Colonies and Plantations. Some perfons, reafoning from the precedent of Ireland, doubt the extenfion of the Habeas Corpus act to the Colonies.—But conceiving it to be, as I do, declaratory of a common law right, and providing for the full and efficient exercise of that, upon the principles above laid down-I have not hefitated to fay it does extend to the Colonies. This proposition must be here underflood to mean all flotutes respecting the general relation between the crown and fubject; not fuch as refpect any particular or peculiar establishment of the realm of England : as for instance, by the 13th and 14th of Car. II. cap. 2, the fupreme military power is declared to be in general, without limitation, in his Majesty; to have always been of right annexed to the office of King of England, throughout all his Majefty's realms and dominions: yet the enacting claufe, which respects only the peculiar establishment of the militia of England, extends to the realm of England only. The fupreme military power of

and

of the crown in all other his Majesty's realms and dominions stands, as to this statute, on the basis of its general power, unlimited. The several legislatures, however, of his Majesty's kingdom of Ireland, of his dominions of Virginia, and of the several Colonies and Plantations in America, have, by laws of their own (operating within the precincts of their jurisdictions, to which the King has given his consent) limited the powers of it, and regulated the exercise of it.

Statutes and cuftoms which refpect only the fpecial and local circumftances of the realm, do not extend to and operate within the faid Colonies and plantations, where no fuch fpecial and local circumftances are found. Thus the ecclefiaftical canon law, and all ftatutes refpecting tythes; the laws refpecting courts baron and copyholds; the game acts; ftatutes refpecting the poor, and fettlements; and all other laws and regulations, having fpecial reference to peculiar and local circumftances, and eftablifhments within the realm, do not extend to, and operate within thefe fettlements, *in partibus exteris*, where no fuch circumftances or eftablifhments exift.

It is a confequence, on the other hand, of the fupremacy of the mother country, that all ftatutes enacted fince the eftablishment of Colonies and plantations, do extend

2

to

ajefty's is ftar, unwever, of his feveral have, in the ch the powers

t only of the within ere no found. all fpectgame fettletions, local in the vithin re no ift.

nand, ntry, olifhctend to

to and operate within fuch Colonies and plantations as are fpecially named as included in fuch statutes, or generally included by the provisions of fuch statutes being declared to extend to all his Majesty's dominions, that now are or hereafter shall be. But then, from the very nature of the fupremacy of a free conftitution, from the effential nature of the political liberty of the conflitutions of the Colonies, this operation has its limits. In like manner, as the Supreme Being, in the moment that he creates a free-agent, does in that moment, and in that instance, necessarily create limits to his own absolute omnipotence, which cannot act as an efficient on this free-agency : So does the constitution of Great Britain, actuated by the King, in the moment that it creates communities, baving political liberty, limit and bound its own fupremacy; which, though in right it goes over the whole empire, cannot, in fact, in the ordinary exercife of it, do any act, within the jurifdictions of the Colonies, which supercedes or deftroys that political liberty which it has created; until these communities have, by fome act of theirs, broken the order of the empire, and exceeded the bounds of their proper constitutions.

No statutes made in the British parlia-Vol. II. E ment, ment, fince the establishment of the faid Colonies and plantations, except as above defcribed, do extend to, and operate within them.

Upon the matters of fact, right, and law, as above stated, it is that the British subjects thus fettled in partibus exteris, without the realm, fo long as they are excluded from an intire union with the realm, as parts participant and integrant of the intire community, have a right to have, as they have, and to be governed by, as they are, a distinct intire civil government, having and exercifing, within the precincts of its own jurifdiction, fovereign authority of the like powers, pre-eminences, and jurifdictions (conformable to the like rights, privileges, immunities, franchifes, and civil liberties) as are to be found and are established in the British government, respecting the British subjects within the realm; holding, using, exercifing, and enjoying the fame in fubordination to the fupreme fovereign power of the empire of Great Britain.

Some of the Colonies conceiving, or being willing to conceive, the *fummum imperium*, or fovereignty of this *intire government* to be a fovereignty which ought to be independent *in its external relations* to the general empire of the fupreme flate—fay, that the officers and minifters, which actuate the powers of

(50)

(51)

e faid Coe defcribn them.

d'law, as jects thus ne realm. an intire irticipant ity, have to be gotire civil , within on, fovepre-eminable to ies, franbe found governs within ng, and h to the mpire of

or being *nperium*, *nt* to be pendent empire officers wers of the

the crown, and of its magilitacy, are the immediate fervants of the community, in which they hold thefe offices, and as fuch ought to be dependent on the will of that community alone for their support and maintenance; " * that the community whom " thefe magistrates and civil officers ferve," " should be the affeffors of their pay."-Having fortified themfelves in this conclusion, they go on to flate, as matter of grievance, that the rights of their civil government are fuperceded by the crown's paying their governors, judges, theriffs, and other civil officers, independent of the grants of the people; on whom, as they fay, (in a manner fimilar as the crown does on parliament) these officers ought to depend. Having got thus far in their reafoning, their reprefentatives in affembly met, proceed to action, and have, by a process equally explicable as maintainable, brought forward and exhibited articles of impeachment, before the council-board, (as a fupreme and dernier refort of judicature) against some of thefe officers as guilty of corrupt practices and high mifdemeanours (by a fp.cies of treason against the state) in receiving pay and fupport from the crown. The leaders of these reasonings and of these measures

* Bofton Votes.

E 2

forget,

forget, in the fanaticifm of their zeal, that these officers, ministers, and magistrates derive their appointment mediately or immediately from the crown-That the commiftions of these officers iffue primarily from the power of the crown — That they are the fervants, not of the community, in which they act, but of the crown, by which the internal government of the Colonies is administered—That it is of the effence of colonial government that they should be foand that therefore the position which fays, that they fould be paid by those exclusively whom they ferve, will go further in a direct contrary direction, than these reasoners wish. What is true of the government of a fovereign independent state, cannot, on the very reason of that truth, be true of the colonial government of a fubordinate community. In the first part of this book, I had stated the matter of this contest, so far as it stood on the ground of expediency: What I now ftate goes to an affumed ground of right, for which, in the nature and effence of the conftitution of a Colony, there cannot be any poffible foundation. That the magistracy, the offices, the judicatories should have all, and the like powers, as they have in the mother state, is of the effence of political freedom; but if the magnitrates, the officers, and judges are detached from their dependence

(52)

pendence on the crown, and put into a flate of abfolute dependence on the people of the Colony, where is that fubordination of government, which is also of the effence of a Colony? Such Colony, claiming only in right, political internal freedom of government, would acquire, in fact, national or independent government.

The fupport of the establishment of the government of the Colonies, and the pay of all the civil officers therein, hath hitherto, in general, been fuffered by the crown to depend upon the grants of the people; the crown supposing and requiring, that it be granted in a manner fimilar to that by which the King himfelf depends for his fupport on parliament. This is the true fpirit of colonial government, admitting the utmoft perfect enjoyment of political freedom, exactly as it is held and enjoyed within the conftitution of the mother state-And thus, I think, it should be held and enjoyed, as far as it is confistent with a subordination to the fupreme government. But the Colonies, who reason and act as above stated, have here paffed that line, which can be the only line of peace and right between Great Britain and her Colonies. The attempt to detach these officers and magistrates of the crown from their dependence on the King, E 3 who

that es deninenmiffrom y are which h the is adof co-10fays, fively direct wifh. fovee very al go-In the matn the ftate , for cone any racy, e all, the itical offir deence

who is to actuate the supreme powers of the crown; the attempt to render these officers and magistrates absolutely dependent on the *temporary will* of the people in their legislature—goes directly to the subversion of colonial, and to the establishment of national or independent government.

(54)

From these principles I venture to affirm, that, if there be any fpirit of pacification yet left, those Colonies who have attempted these encroachments beyond the line of their rights, must retreat back again within their And if then (which is all that the line. government of the mother country hath hitherto required) the Colonies will make their grants for the fupport of government by a permanent revenue, given in fuch form as to support the officers and magistrates thereof in a frate of independence, and free from all undue influence, (as Jamaica has done, and found no evil in it) I think the crown would, I think in the fpirit of colonial government it should, abstain from making grants to these officers thus already adequately provided for. And I think it is a fair conclusion from the theorem above stated, that (this contest once thus settled to as to infure the fubordination of the colonial government) these officers should be dependent on the grants of the people, mu, tatis rs of the cofficers t on the legiflaof colotional or

affirm, tion yet empted of their in their hat the y hath l make rnment h form ristrates nd free ica has ink the f colofrom already nk it is above fettled he could be , muitatis

tatis mutandis, just as the crown and its officers are on the parliament. ... In fine, this is, de facto, the old standing on which the crown originally put them. This latter. mode, by which the crown undertakes the fupport and maintenance of its own officers, was a measure merely defensive, in order to maintain its constitutional authority over its own officers, actuating its own powers.-The Colonies have been repeatedly cautioned of this, in being told that they would drive the crown into the neceffity of this measureunlefs they would support their governments, and the officers thereof in a flate of freedom from all undue influence—and it is now in their power to put an end to this meafure, whenever they shall pleafe to do.

As I have here explained, under the theorem above flated, an aberration from the *true line of colonial* government, on the popular fide, which, at this moment, is in operation towards mifchief; I do not think it would be amifs, to point out another on the fide of the crown, which may hereafter lead to more important danger. This cafe likewife falls under the fame theorem.

It hath always appeared to me, that very great objections, grounded in law and policy, do arife against those grants of the E 4 power

power of government, which are annexed to the grants of great property in the Proprietary governments. These grants unite in the proprietor, a predominating power which the crown itself no longer enjoys. They annex the influence of an overbalance of property, in a private fubject, to the powers of the crown. This governing proprietor becomes thus both fovereign and landlord : and has as fuch, a power of a magnitude which is dangerous to the state, and oppreflive to the fubject. By trufting the powers of the crown in fuch a Landgrave, the neceffary diftribution of the powers of government amongst the community, and the perfect and adequate exercise thereof, is, in a way inconfistent with the rights of British government, in part intercepted.

By fubfituting this Landgrave as the fovereign, the people are in their actions and affections cut off from that direct union and communication with the crown, which the true fpirit of conftitutional allegiance always cheristic and keeps alive.

This Landgrave either by the influence of the balance of his property, may create a leading too great even for the crown itfelf to oppofe: Or, while the honour and dignity of the crown is committed in every difpute, which rexed to roprienite in power enjoys. balance to the ig progn and er of a e state, rufting Lande pownunity, there-: rights pted.

e foveis and on and ch the ce al-

uence cate a itfelf gnity pute, hich which the landlord has with his tenants; while the intereft of the fupreme flate becomes fubordinate to the intereft of the landlord's property, the government may become odicus. Those disputes which render the people discontented with government in the proprietor, tend to alienate their affections from the crown. For various reafons, and on various accounts, the people do not find that inward fecurity, and external protection, under the administration of a proprietary government, which they think the rights of the British constitution hold out—They do, therefore, incline to *flretch their duty nicely* towards such.

There were many fuch governments at the firft fettlement of the Colonies*—" all " were made unhappy by them, and found " no relief but in recurring finally to the " immediate government of the crown. Pen-" fylvania and Maryland are the only two " of the kind remaining;" and Penfylvania did at length prefer an humble petition to the King, praying his Majefty to take that province under his immediate protection and government. Thus much, thinking the rights of the crown, the liberties of the peo-

* Cool thoughts on the fituation of affairs in Penfylvania, 1764.

ple,

ple, and the welfare of the whole empire deeply interested, I could not but fay:—I enter not into the subject in particular; that is not here necessary.

From the principles of colonial government as above stated, both on fact as well as in right, it follows-That the freeholders, within the precincts of these jurifdictions, have, as of right they ought to have, a fhare in the power of making those laws of their internal government, which they are to be governed by. This power derives from a right which the community, as a free-agent of political liberty, has to the ufe of its own will, fo long as it is feparated from all communion and participation in the fupreme will of the mother flate. They have, therefore, both in fact and right, a power of fending their reprefentatives, or creating their attornies to act for them, and to confent for them in matters of legiflation. These representatives, when met in general affembly, have, together with the crown, a right to perform and do all the like acts, refpecting matters, rights, and perfons, within the precincts of their jurifdiction, as the parliament hath refpecting the realm and British dominions. This legislative is * " as

* Letters of the affembly of the Maffachusetts province, p. 47.

" perfectly

e empire fay :—I lar ; that

governas well freeholdjurisdicto have, iofe laws ich they er derives ity, as a o the ule feparated oation in e. They right, a tives, or em, and giflation. n general rown, a ike acts, ls, with-, as the alm and is * " as

isetts pro-

perfectly

" perfectly free, as a fubordination will ad-" mit." If it is the conftitution of the British empire, that these diffinct external communities are to have no communion or participation in the will of the governing community *-they must have *internal freedom* of

* Sir Francis Bernard in his Principles of Law and Polity, lays down fynthetically theorems, the very reverfe of thefe. He fays, prop. 14,—" That legiflation is not " neceflary to an external and dependent government, ju-" rifdiction is neceflary and effential to it. And therefore, that —

" Prop. 15. A feparate legiflation is not an abfolute " right of British subjects, refiding out of the feat of em-" pire; it may or may not be allowed, and has or has " not been granted, according to the circumftances of " the community."-I mult think, following the deductions of my own analysis, that if a community of British subjects has a right to political freedom, and for refides out of the feat of empire, as to have no participation of will with it; the confequence is neceflary, That it must have an internal freedom of will: If, on the other hand, the circumstances of the dependance of the community are fuch, that it is to be governed by will, ab extra, I am fo far from conceiving how internal jurifdiction, any more than legiflation, becomes necesfary and effential; that I think it is impoffible to communicate it to, or that it can exist in, such a community. The community is from this its nature paffive, and the jurifdiction of empire must act upon it, ab extra, as an efficient.

While the circumflances of a community are fuch, either from any natural incapacity in its infancy, or from any political incapacity, by its holding principles incompatible with the empire of the mother country, or principles that refer to a foreign jurifdiction — there fuch Colonies of will; a reprefentative legiflature is the only form, in which the will of *fuch a community of British fubjects* can be formed, fo as to be the will of that *intire fociety*, and free. The freedom of this will stands, in its subordination to that of the supreme state, exactly in the fame predicament, as

60)

(

Colonies cannot be trusted with their own internal will. They remain therefore under pupillage or regency, governed ab extra—as to the jurifdiction as well as will.

Such have been the actual state of many of our Colonies in their first establishment, and of others which we have acquired by conquest—wherein the conflituents have been Roman Catholicks. Such Colonies have been governed by external government, by a governor, a council, judges, and laws made and imposed ab extra. 'The neceffity of this species of provincial government, under fuch circumstances of *infancy* or incapacity, was, in my time, fo clearly underflood and fo univerfally acknowledged, even by the British Colonies themselves, that when the commissioners of the Colonies, met in congress at Albany in 1754, unanimously adopted a plan of union *, as proposed by Benjamin Franklin, Esquire, the establishment of this external or provincial government, over fuch new fettlements as should be made by the government of this union, was the mode of government fixed for them. A governor general named by the crown, together with a council chofen by the Colonies (in which choice thefe new fettlements had no voice) were, as a government external to them, " to " make laws for regulating and governing fuch new " fettlements." This is rather a higher tone of external or provincial government, than even the government which at pretent rules in Canada: for in the government of Canada the council are of, and inhabitants in, the community thus governed.

* Vide Appendix, No. IV.

the

ire is the fuch a comformed, fo fociety, and ftands, in fands, in fupreme cament, as

internal will. ency, governed ill.

of our Coloothers which e conflituents ies have been governor, a ofed ab extra. l government, acity, was, in niverfally acs themselves, nics, met in lopted a plan lin, Efquire, ncial governld be made mode of gnal named by y the Coloents had no them, " to g fuch new ne of exterthe governpr in the goinhabitants

thç

(61)

the free-will of the human fystem does in respect of the supreme power of God himfelf. In the moment that the Divine Will determined to create the human fystem having free-will-in that moment, and in that instance (as I faid before) he gave bounds and limits to his own will .- Infinite power cannot do acts which imply a contradiction : It cannot create a free-agent, and then act towards that agent as not being free.-The moment that the fpirit of the British government determined that the Colonies were feparate, distinct, external communities, not having, or capable of having, communion and participation in the will of the fupreme flate — and yet to be politically free; internal freedom of will, within fuch communities, became neceffary, and was created.-In the moment, and in the inftance, in which fuch was created - the fupreme government gave bounds and limits to its own will, excluded from operating within the precincts of the community thus become free.—Although this fupreme will, became thus bounded, it was not annihilated; it remained and does remain in a kind of abeyance, fo long as these Colonies shall continue to act, and to exift, as what they are, free, but fubordinate communities; and hath a right to interpose, and to act in all cases whatfoever as preventive or remedial, where the

the prefervation of the empire, or the fubordination of the Colonies, make fuch interpolition neceffary.

(62)

These communities, therefore, exactly as man doth in the moral freedom of his will, do and have always poffeffed (fo underftood) a perfect internal peculiar power of legiflation, within the limits and precincts of their refpective jurifdictions; and more effectially, a peculiar proper right, by acts of fuch internal legiflation, to give and grant their own immediate property, lying within their own jurifdiction, in aids and fubfidies which are of good will.-This right, however, goes not to fervices, which are of right. The fupreme government will of right claim the quit rents, the referved fhare of mines and royalties, and every other branch of revenue which comes under the defcription of fervices referved.

" All the inhabitants of the kingdom, (fays Mr. Bacon*) held their effates under a general fervice, which by common right they were bound to perform, in time of danger, to join in defence of their country. This is the common fealty all men owe, and which, if refufed, renders

. * On Government, Part I. Chap. 54.

" the

101

(63)

or the fube fuch in-

100

exactly as f his will, inderftood) of legiflafts of their efpecially, f fuch inrant their ithin their idies which vever, goes ·bt. The ght claim of mines nch of relescription

kingdom, fates uncommon form, in e of their fealty all l, renders

" the

54.

" the party guilty of treason against his " country, and his eftate under the penalty " of forfeiture." Although therefore aids and fubfidies are of good will +; yet, if upon requilition made to the Colonics for fuch, in fupport of the empire, and of the government of their respective communities, fuch are refused either by the whole, or by any particular colony; that refufal, fo far as it goes to a renouncing the fervice which it owes to the supreme state-fo far as it withdraws from under the fubordination to the general interest-fo far as it goes to any claim of exemption from the common burthens of the empire, does, from the very nature of the Being of fuch communities, juftify the exertion of external provincial government; which otherwife remains fufpended, as I faid before, in a fpecies of abeyance.

This peculiar right of *internal legiflature*, cannot, however, pais the bounds of the

+ Since writing the opinion above, I read in the inflructions given by the provincial delegates to their affembly, the following declaration.—" We folemnly de-" clare, that if on fuch occasions, We, or our posterity " thall refuse, neglect, or decline to contribute, it will " be a mean and manifest violation of a plain duty, and a " weak and wicked defertion of the true interests of this " province; which ever have been, and must be bound " up in the prosperity of the mother country."

jurifdiction

jurifdiction of the community-it is not exclusive of those acts of supreme external legiflature, which both in regulation and taxation extends up to the very bounds of this peculiar jurifdiction.-This right of internal taxation cannot go, in any way, or on any pretence whatfoever, to an exclusion and exemption from all fuch external taxes, which the fupreme government by imposts and port duties shall think fit and right to lay on all property passing (under its protection) the boundaries of its acting jurifdiction-The Colonies never did, in form and as of right, till the year 1768, claim fuch exemption—they knew that in most, if not in all their charters, it was an express stipulation that they should pay such .-- Notwithfanding the ingenuity of the diffinction on which this novel claim is founded; namely, that the Colonies ought not to be taxed by parliament, for the express purpose of raising a revenue; they must know that the port duties, to which they always fubmitted, which they have always paid, and which were laid by parliament-made part of the revenue of the customs, which were given and granted by the Commons of Great Britain to the crown, in fupport of its government and dignity.

There is in the nature of the things themfelves, in the rights of government, and in the liberties of the Colonies, an effential difference is not external leand taxis of this of interly, or on exclusion nal taxes, y imposts right to its prong jurifin form aim fuch t, if not es stipu-Notwithction on namely, by paring a ret duties, ich they laid by e of the d by the own, in ty.

themand in effential fference

difference between internal and external taxes, and between the power of imposing the one and the other, deriving from the actual diflinction, as above flated, between internal and external, national and provincial govern-1. The conditions under which the ment. Colonists did first quit the realm, and settle in America; and on which their powers of government are established; do expressly stipulate for the payment of subfidies, duties, and imposts, (understood as port duties) almost without variation, in the fame words, throughout every charter: On the other hand, every charter does expressly or intentionally make a diffinction between those, and fuch taxes as they are permitted and empowered to lay on their own estates, real and personal, within the precincts and limits of their respective territories, or on fuch transactions as thall pass within their own jurifdiction.

The charter of Virginia, after having directly fixed the right of payment of fublidies, imposts, and duties from the company to the crown—and having made a grant of the fame to the company for twenty-one years—has these words, " that they shall be " free from all *fubfidies and customs* in Vir-" ginia for twenty-one years, and from all " taxes and impositions for ever;" making not only an express distinction in the mat-Vol. II. F ter, but in the right. It was in confequence of this, that the charters incorporating them, or erecting them into provinces, gave the internal governments a right of taxing themfelves within their precincts.

The charter of Maryland, in all the grants therein made, makes an express faving of imposts, duties, and customs, to the King, and his heirs for ever; which the people of that province, by the express condition of their charter, are bound to pay.-Yet the fame charter, making the diffinction both in matter and right, between internal and external taxation, fays, "We, our heirs and " fuccefors, shall at no time fet and make, " or caufe to be fet, any imposition, cuftom, " or other taxation, rate, or contribution " whatfoever, in and upon the dwellers and " inhabitants of the aforefaid province, for " their lands, goods, tenements, or chattels, " WITHIN THE SAID PROVINCE."

In the fame manner, and almost in the fame words, all the charters of incorporation and government (which acts are to be distringuished from the original grants of the lands and territories) make the tame distinction—stipulating expressly for the payment of all imposts, fublidies, and duties, according to the large of merchants; but as to the lands, tenements, g them, ave the g them-

e grants ving of e King, eople of ition of Yet the both in and exeirs and I make, cuftom, ribution *lers and* nce, for chattels,

in the oration be diof the liftinctyment cording lands, ments, (67) tenements, and hereditaments, within the precincts and jurifdiction, leaving those ex-

precincts and jurifdiction, leaving those exclusive, as objects of the taxation of the several legislatures which are respectively thereby established; with power to ordain and establish all manner of laws, to impose taxes, and to affess and levy money on the lands and hereditaments within their respective precincts.

2. As the liberty and power of *internal* legiflation was both intentionally and expressly granted to the Colonies under this diffinction, and fo underflood, "* as far as the crown "could or might grant:" So the exercise and administration of government towards these people, hath been, for a century and a half, conducted on this plan; always imposing external or port duties; but never directly laying internal duties and taxes on the dwellers and inhabitants of those Colonies, for their lands, tenements, hereditaments, or chattels, or on their transactions within the precincts of the jurifdictions of their feveral territories.

The Colonies having been used to this difunction, by the course and practice of government, have, in their reasoning, marked

* Charter of Virginia.

F 2

an

an effential difference in the nature of the thing.

Whatever tax or duty is imposed on any property imported into their country, is indeed annexed to *that property*, but not upon them, either in their rights or perfons, until they *choofe*, by purchasing that property with the tax annexed to it, *to annex that tax* also to themselves. But this they used to confider as an act of their own confent.

Whatever tax is imposed on any property which, within the precincts of their jurifdictions, is immediately and intimately united to their perfons and rights: fuch tax must be paid, without any interposition of their own will.

The first is *external*, and annexed or not; at their own will: the second is *internal*, and absolutely annexed to what is inseparable from them.

Marking this effential difference in the nature of the thing—whatever right they can be supposed to have of taxing themselves, even although it were exclusive, within the limits and precincts of their own jurisdictions; such right is limited by those very bounds, and cannot go beyond low water mark. f the

n any is inupon , unoperty *at tax* fed to

perty jurifunith tax tion of

r not, ternal, arable

n the cy can elves, he liifdicvery water nark. mark. The acting power of the empire of Great Britain comes up to this line---and hath, as I showed above, a right (not bounded by any of the internal rights of the Colonists or Colonies) to exercise such empire external to them, both in regulation and taxation, as all other states have and do exercise.

From the principles of Colonial Governmentabove flated, as they are found effablished in right and true policy, it alfo follows, that all the executive offices, from the fupreme civil magistrate, as locum-tenens of the King, down to that of conftable and headborough, must of right be effablished with all and the like powers, neither more nor lefs than as defined by law and the constitution, as they are effablished in Great Britain; and all thefe offices are thus, de facto, fo constituted in the Colonies.

From the principles above, it is of right derived, that the judicial offices and courts of juffice, eftablished within the precincls of the faid communities, have all those jurifdictions and powers, " * as fully and amply, " to all intents and purposes whatsoever, as

* Law of New England, confirmed by the crown, October 22d, 1700.

F 3

" the

the courts of King's Bench, Common
Pleas, and Exchequer, within his Majefty's kingdom of England, have, and
ought to have; and are empowered to
give judgment, and to award execution
thereupon."

Hence also it is, that by the possession of the great feal of the province, delivered to his Majefty's governor, and by the exercife of the powers thereof-there is eftablished, within the precincts of each respective jurifdiction, all the fame and like powers of Chancery (except where by charter fpecially excluded) as his Majefty's Chancellor, within the kingdom of England, hath, and of right ought to have, by delivery of the great feal of England : and hence it is, that all the like rights, privileges, and powers follow the use, exercise, and application of the great feal of each Colony or Province, within the precincts aforefaid, as doth and ought of right to follow the ufe, exercife, and application of the great feal in England.

It is from the right of an establishment of *internal intire jurifdictions*, as aforelaid, to which the fubject in the Colony is amenable in all his rights and actions, and through which his fervice and allegiance must be derived to the crown—and from which no 4.

-1-

Common nis Mave, and vered to xecution

offestion lelivered he exeris eftarespecpowers rter speincellor, th, and of the is, that powers ation of rovince, oth and xercife, gland.

ihment faid, to nenable hrough nuft be tich no appeal (71)

appeal lies, in criminal cafes - that it hath been conceived, that the Colonist cannot be removed from the jurifdiction to which he is amenable, fo as to be made amenable to any jurifdiction * external and foreign to his natural and legal refiancy; to which fuch foreign jurifdiction he may be thereby tranfported, and under which he may be brought to trial, and receive judgment, contrary to the rights and privileges of the fubject, as declared by the fpirit and intent, and exprefsly and fpecially by the fixteenth fection of the Habeas Corpus act: And that if the perfon of any fubject, within the faid Colony, fhould be feized or detained by any power iffuing from any Court, without the jurifdiction of the Colony where he had his legal refiancy, it would become the duty of the courts of juffice, within fuch Colony, to iffue the writ of Habeas Corpus. This is faid of the execution of juffice, in the ordinary course of it : But from the nature of the principles above led up to, this peculiar internal judicial jurifdiction, cannot exclude the exercise of the sovervign remedial power of the governing state as above described.

* A doubt has been raifed against this proposition, from the following right, *de facto*; viz. that the Chief Justice's warrant reaches any part of the British dominions; and that it is a jurifdiction not foreign in any part of them.

F 4

Although

Although, for the fame reason, that there were originally no laws in Rome made for the punishment of parricide; there are no laws in being, or as yet made, whereby the fupreme power of Great Britain may guard itself against such treason and revolt, as it cannot get punished in the Colonies; namely, because such crimes were not in Rome, and are not as yet in the Colonies known, or conceived to exist: Yet if any such acts of treason and revolt should be committed in the Colonies, and fuch fhould be, at the fame time, the general spirit of the Colonies, that justice could not be done thereupon-the supreme sovereign power cannot remain, nay, it cannot exist any longer, without its remedy; and therefore bath a right to fuch. When I fay, there are not as yet any fuch laws in being, as can regularly take the fubject from his internal jurifdiction, and bring him to Great Britain to be tried-I do it as I think that the old statute of Henry the Eighth, made for the trial of treafons committed out of the realm-is in like manner, as I have above deferibed the fupreme power of the mother flate to be, limited by the creation of these colonial intire jurifdictions, who have acts and laws (to which the crown hath confented) for the trial and punishment of treasons within themselves: And because I think, that the applying the purvien

erewere the pulaws in fupreme rd itself t cannot ely, bene, and own, 'or acts of itted in , at the e Colotherecannot , withright to yet any ake the on, and d - I doHenry reafons e manupreme ited by rifdicwhich al and felves : ng the urvieu

purvieu of that statute, which was made to bring fubjects of the realm, who had committed treason out of the realm (where there was no criminal jurifdiction to which they could be amenable) to trial within the realm, under that criminal jurifdiction, to which alone, by their legal refiancy and allegiance, they were amenable, does not ftand with the cafe of a fubject, not of the realm, whofe legal refiancy is without the realm, and within another jurifdiction, and who is, by that refiancy, and by his allegiance, amenable to that jurifdiction, authoriled to try and give judgment upon all capital offences whatfoever, without appeal: And becaufe I do not think, that the court erected by act of parliament, in the 11th and 12th of Williain III. c. 7, for the trial of piracies, felonies, and robberies committed in or upon the tea, or in any haven, river, creek, or place, where the admiral has jurifdiction, does any way affect the cafe I stated. Nor does the fourteenth fection of that act, (directing that the commissioners, of whom such court confifts, may iffue their warrant for the apprehending fuch pirates, &c. in order to their being tried in the Colonies, or fent into England) any way fupercede the jurifdictions of the courts in the Colonies and plantations, and authorife the taking fuch pirates as criminals, from those jurifdictions; becaufe

(73)

because this statute respects crimes committed in such places only "where the admiral has "jurifdiction," and cafes to which the jurifdiction of those provincial courts do not extend.

From the rights explained by this line of Colonial Government to be eftablished as above, it is derived—that in like manner as " the command and difficition " of the militia, and of all forces by fea " and land, and of all forts and places of " ftrength, is, and by the laws of Eng-" land ever was, the undoubted right of " his Majefty, and his royal predeceffors, " Kings and Queens of England, within his " Majefty's realms, and dominions;" in like manner as the fupreme military power and command (fo far as the conftitution knows and will juftify its eftablishment) is infeparably annexed to, and forms an effential part of, the office of fupreme civil magistrate, the King: So in like manner, in all governments under the King, where the conftituents are British subjects, and where the communities are British, having political liberty; the fupreme military command, within the precincts of fuch jurifdictions, must be inseparably annexed, and is de facto, to the office of fupreme civil magistrate, his Majefty's vice-regent, lieutenant, or locum-tenens, in what form foever established :

ommitted miral has the jurifeot extend.

this line tablished in like fpolition es by fea places of of Engright of eceffors, thin his is;" in v power fitution nent) is n essenvil mar, in all ere the where political nmand, ctions, e facto, istrate, or loblifhed ;

ed : So that the King cannot by any commillion of regency, by any committion or charter of government, separate or withdraw the tupreme command of the military, from the office of fupreme civil magistrate, either by referving this command in his own hands, to be exercited and executed, independent of the civil power, nor by granting a diffinct commission to any military commander in chief, to to be exercited and executed—but more efpecially, not within fuch jurifdictions where fuch fupreme military power (fo far as the conftitution knows, and will justify the fame) is already granted and annexed to the office of fupreme civil magistrate. Nay further, the fupreme and fovereign power of the flate, while the Colonies remain and act as fubordinate, and as sebat they are, cannot establish any law martial, or military command, which may fupercede and not be fubject to the fupreme civil magistrate, within the respective precincts of the jurifdictions of fuch Colonies, and plantations-Because, if it could, then (while openly, and according to the rights of the crown, and the liberties of British fubjects, it appeared to establish a British conftitution of political liberty) it would eftablifh a military power and defpotifm--which implies a contradiction. This state of rights, however, which, while the empire is fafe ; while

while the Colonies remain in the due order of their fubordination, and act as what they are; excludes all fuch fuperceding power; cannot bar that fuperintending fovereign power from exerciling, in cales of extreme neceffity, a dictatorial, or cenforial and remedial power, which all states must have within them, nequid detrimenti capiat refpublica, and that the union, vitality, and efficiency of the fupreme empire may be preferved and maintained. By the very conditions under which the fupreme fovereign power of Great Britain is bound to protect, the Colonics from outward danger, and under which it is bound to preferve them united, and fubordinate to the empire-it must neceffarily have a right to exercise and exert a fupreme military power; which goes over and fupercedes all other, whenever the cafe which requires it, comes into existence.

(76)

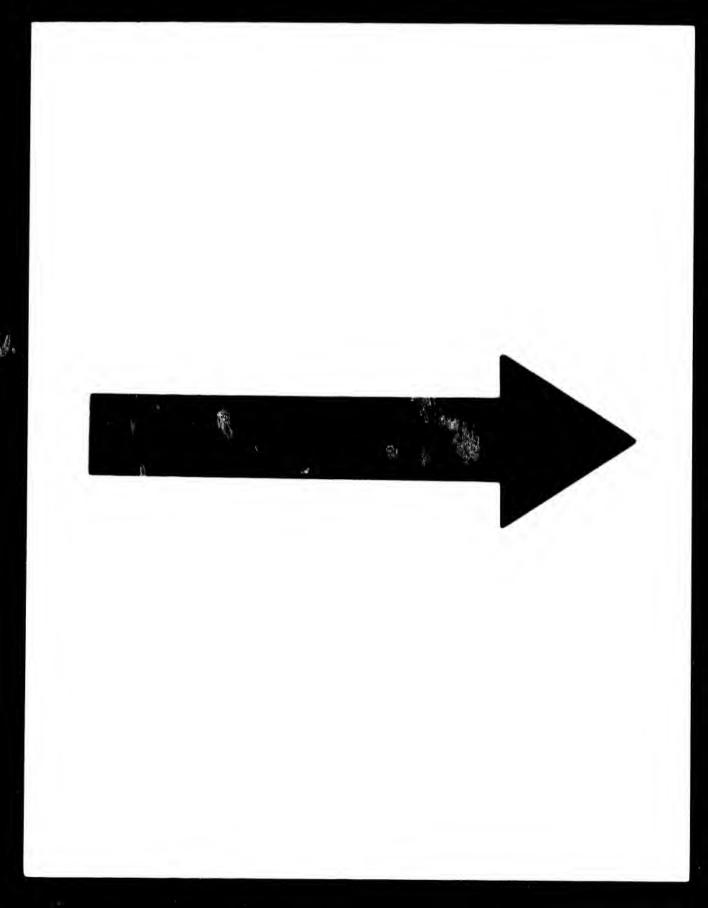
The doctrines which derive from the analyfis above made, tried alfo by applying them to the fact in the conftitutions of the Colonies, do. eftablifh the empire of Great Britain as fovereign and fupreme over the Colonies, *in the intendment and remembrance of law*, in all cafes whatfoever; and in the actual exercise of it, in all cafes which are neceffary to its being, asfuch. They at the fame time fix in the most perfect fecurity, the *free-will abfolute of the Golonies*, (77)

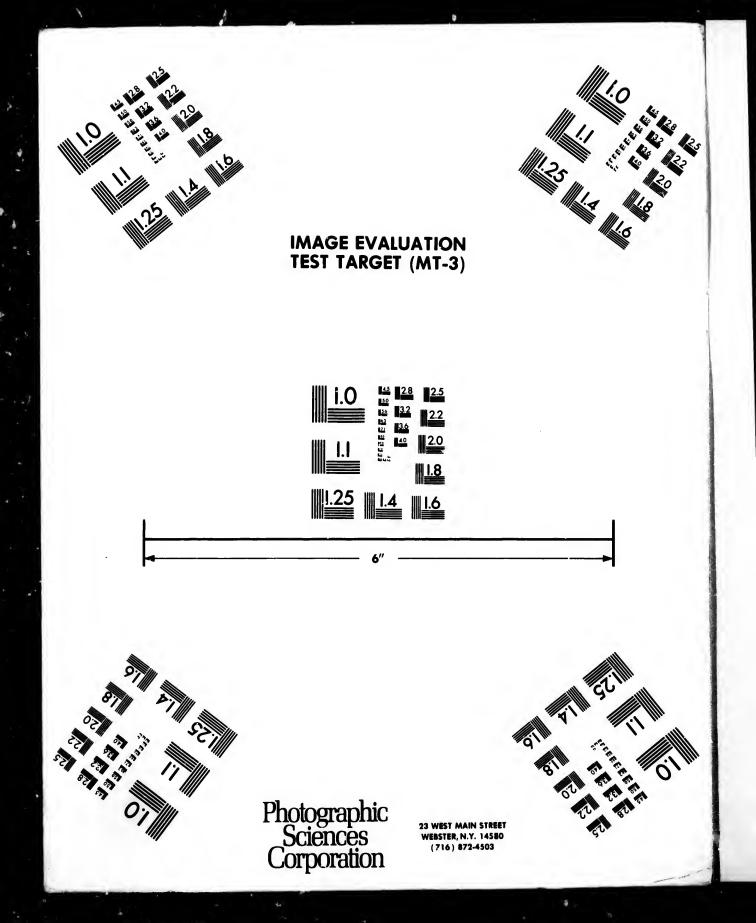
due order what they g power; lovereign f extreme al and renust have at respuband efficic.prefervconditions. in power otect, the nd under n united, must ned exert a goes over the cafe nce.

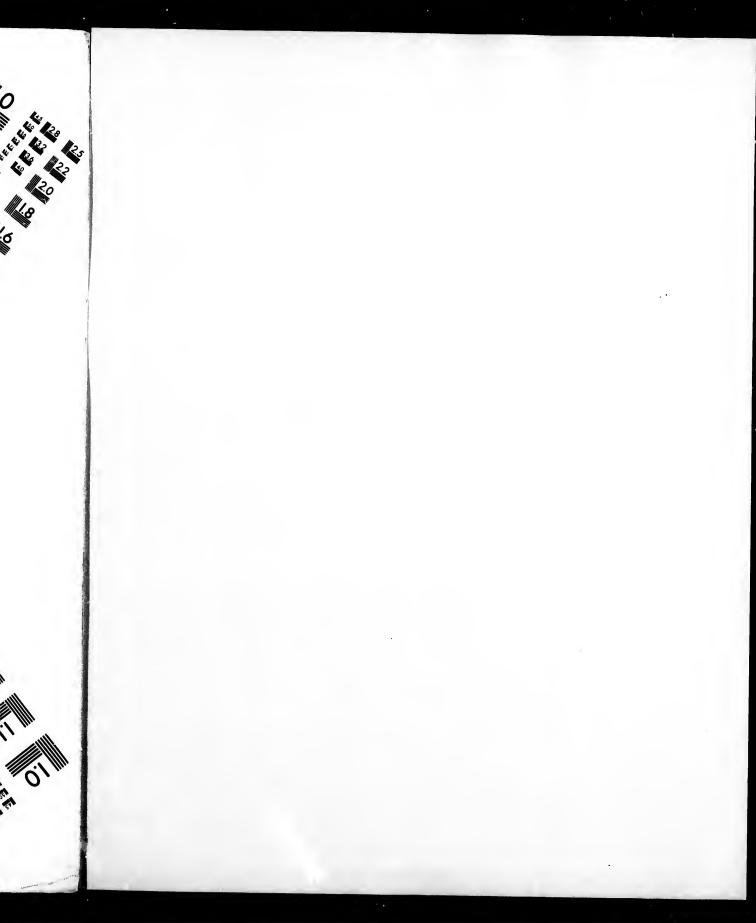
he analythem to onies, do. as foveall cafes ife of it, being, as the moft e of the Colonies,

Colonies, fo far as it is confiftent with a fubordination. As they do not give up any of the rights of the fupremacy of Great Britain; as they do not break down any of the barriers of the liberties of the Colonies : I will from them venture to define the empire of Great Britain to be, in jurifdiction and legiflation, fupreme over the Colonies, in all cafes what foever, except where it is necessarily limited by its own power in the creation of external communities, having political freedom; and that the Colonies have of 1 st, internal government, both in jurifdiction and legiflation, perfeelly free in all cafes what foever, except in fuch as break that fubordination, which Colonies of British subjects, settled on the lands of the mother country, owe to it, and to its government.

While THIS LINE of COLONIAL GO-VERNMENT defines the precife relation which fubfifts in nature, and right, between Great Britain and her Colonies; I hope Great Britain will not difdain it, in that it does not give more power to its empire, than even God himfelf hath over the human fyftem : I hope the Colonies will not revolt at it, in that it does not give them more liberty than that which the human fyftem enjoys, in its fubordination to the fupreme Being. This line, not only in its general theory eftablifhes the rights of the empire, and fecures the liberties of the people; but







but in practice and in its application, (as hath been feen above) goes to all cafes wherever itbecomes neceffary, without endangering those liberties; as it would imply a contradiction, whatever may be its power, that it fhould have a right to deftroy the leaft of them, while the Colonies remain as what they actually are. This line, in theory, in practice, and in every application of it, gives the Colonies an intire internal jurifdiction, and perfect freedom of legiflation, fo long as they remain, as free, fo fubordinate, feparate communities.

(78)

This bath been the line of the administration of the government of England, towards the Colonies, and of their obedience towards its supreme empire; for near a century and a half. There have been aberrations on both fides of it, from both parties; but there never was on our part an express departure from it, until when, in the year 1764, we exerted a right of exercifing external government over the Colonies, by impofing *internal taxes* on them : nor on the part of the Colonies, until fince the year 1768; they not only in doctrine, but by deeds, denied the right which Great Britain hath, of imposing external taxes, on property passing into, or coming out from their jurifdictions and precincts, by imposts, customs, and other

hath ver it thofe tion, hem, y ac-Stice, coand g as barate

iftratolience Cenerraties; prefs year sterpofpart 68; de-, of fing ions and ther

other port duties levied and paid on the boundary of its own jurifdiction; nor until, by afferting that the minifters and officers of the crown, administering the government of the Colonies, are the fervants (exclusively fo understood) of the Colonies, and should therefore be paid by them alone; until by actions in maintenance of these exclusive claims, their conduct went to the subversion of *colonial*, and to the erection of *national government* within their jurifdictions.

It will be " an infinitely more arduous " tafk, if it be poffible," to reftore peace between us, than it hath been found to be, to draw *this line*; if in the fpirit of our politics we do not Both fincerely, in good faith, and in perfect confidence return to it.

When Great Britain faw that fhe had exceeded in her power, and had advanced beyond this line; the good humour and honour of the nation, repressed back its step and returned to it.

The Colonies have now in their turn advanced beyond this line—when coming forth, without the precincts of their jurifdictions, they obstruct our national government in parts where we have a right to exercise it : when fixing in these parts, external to their communities, communities, posts of claim which they fortify against our rights, even within our own jurisdiction—when they fay that we have no right to lay external taxes—when they result the execution of those acts of parliament, which should collect them on the boundaries of our acting jurisdiction—when they attempt, as above explained, to erect national government within their peculiar jurisdictions: The Colonies (I fay) have in their turn exceeded, and

" At one flight bound, have overleap'd all bounds."

Notwithstanding, therefore, the universal prevalence, which *fears*, *jealousies*, and other *feverish* passions have given to these opinions *: notwithstanding the present unanimity

* The cafe flated, in the course of the argument, goes only to the matter of right : But as there are other reasonings, as to the extent to which this right may be juftly carried-it will not be amifs to obferve here, by way of note, the line and effect of that reafoning .- They fay, with fome ground of juffice, that where, and in every cafe, in which we exact, and enjoy, the monopoly of trade with the Colonies, as that goes to the deriving from their commerce every poffible profit which can arife ; the fuper-adding taxes to this utmost profit, is absurd and unjust. With whatever truth this may be faid, it is not more absurd and unjust in the Colonies, than what has been constantly done in the East India trade, &c. in England. But If from reasons of expediency, and from a spirit of moderation, Great Britain should give up the exertion

(80)

fortify wn julave no by relift ament, oundan they *national* prifdicn their

ounds."

iverfal i other e opit unanimity

ent, goes reafone justly way of ney fay, n every opoly of ng from arife ; urd and , it is n what &c. in d from up the xertion

nimity with which the Colonists, and Colonies in their collective meetings, make thefe claims of exemption as rights; I am fure, if ever time and feafon would give them opportunity of returning to their old affections; if they would refer this point to their own honour; if they are fincere in faying, " That all which they defire, is to " be placed on the ftanding, on which they " were originally put ;" they also in their turn would fall back to this line, as being that on which they originally flood. This, if fome strange combination of events does not give rife to new fystems of things, is the only fafe line of peace; here must the first step of PACIFICATION be fixed.—But if all temper is loft; if all that truft and confidence, with which men can meet in bufinefs, is deftroyed; if the fpirit of peace is flown;

exertion of its right, in all cafes whatfoever; wherein the monopoly operates; are the Colonies aware how much more, and with how much more inconvenience to them, Great Britain might avail itfelf of a revenue, by laying duties on those articles, in which they are permitted a trade unrefiricted by any monopoly ? If Great Britain was to impose duties, to be paid at the ports of the Colonies, on the exportation of rice, corn, and all other commodities with which they are now permitted to trade with foreign nations and their colonies; the argument of the monopoly could not operate in bringing forward any right to oppose to this exertion : and I am fure they would not know how, in prudence towards their own intereft, to avoid the payment of fuch duties.

· : this.

VOL. H. Ches G.

Sector

this old *standing*, as they call it, can be no longer the basis of the establishment of the British empire, in its administration of the government of its Colonies: We must look for *some other line of pacification*, on *some other* ground.

82

)

(

No other line of pacification remains, than either that the Colonies be admitted into the Parliament of Great Britain by a general British Union; or that they have a Parliament of their own under an American Union. There is no other part in the alternative, than that they be put either in the fituation of Scotland, or in that of Ireland.

A British Union of all the British dominions, by admitting the American Colonies into parliament, has been now for near twenty years repeatedly recommended to this country, by those who knew the circumftances of both countries, as they flood related to, and connected with each other. The first part of this work contains, a full explanation of the grounds and neceffary procedures of this measure. When it was first proposed, within the period of the last war, it might have been eafily, and would have been chearfully carried into execution. Ten years ago it was not yet defperate-but the fpirit of this country difdained the idea: and an be no nt of the on of the nuft look *lome other*

remains, admitted tain by a y have a American the alterer in the Ireland.

itish doan Colofor near ended to the cirey ftood h other. , a full heceffary was first aft war, ld have n. Ten but the e idea: and

(83)

and the government of it never will or can engage in any fuch measure, which the spirit of the people does not take the lead of and demand. * We wretched empirics who have entertained the idea, and have written about it, have been treated as Utopians .- This interesting and decive crifis of the affairs of this country, wherein a British Union might have been formed, has been treated like Friar Bacon's brazen head in the puppet-shew.-The nation, whom it concerned to watch it, flept while it pronounced—Time is to come. -Time is. - They are awakened now with the breaking up of the charm, and have only heard—Time's paft. The Colonies now in their turn *have learnt* to renounce this union. To obviate even the offer of it, they previoufly reject it : they fay it is impracticable, and will not hear of it. This fymptom (a mortal one there) flowed itfelf early in the Roman empire, when the provinces found it their interest, and therefore took the fpirit to + reject the communion

* See two letters at the end.

+ Ipfa denique Julia [lex lata eft] quâ lege civitas eft fociis & Latinis data. Qui fundi populi facti non effent, civitatem non haberent. In quo magna contentio Heraclienfium, & Neapolitanorum fuit: cum magna pars in iis civitatibus fœderis fui libertatem, civitati anteferret.

Cicero orat. pro Balbo, § 1.

of the city of Rome, even when offered to them; preferring a fubordination, which they found could not be very firistly exacted of them, to the being united in all the rights, privileges, and pre-eminences of the city.

84)

(

If our Colonies by any new-excited property of attraction amongst themselves, are drawing together in an American Union : If we find this American attraction to be *elec*trical; having learnt how this is raifed by friction, we should know that the application of force will the more encrease its power. If this then be the cafe, that being let alone, they will form an union; and that being agitated by opposition from without, they will the fooner, the clofer, and the firmer coalefce; what remains for us to do, but just that very thing, which if Philip of Spain had done, the provinces of the Netherlands would not have fallen off from his government? If he had put his own government, in that fpirit and temper of it which was practicable, at the head of an union, which he might have feen he could not prevent, bis lieutenant might have been at this day Stadt*bolder* of the united provinces.

It would, upon the whole of things, have been happy even for the provinces themtelves, had their government taken at first 6 this fered to bich they of them, , privi-

ted proves, are ion: If be elecaifed by olication power. et alone, at being ut, they e firmer do, but hilip of Netherrom his governwhich , which ent, bis Stadt-

> s, have themat firft this

this monarchical form. The wife and temperate amongst them faw this; and when they separated from the Spanish government, they fought to put themselves under the English in this very form *. Had it been the spirit of the English policy, in queen Elizabeth's time, to have established her *lieutenant as a Stadtbolder*; had it even been the temper of those whom she fent to command in these provinces, to have acted in that spirit and character; these provinces might have been at this day parts of the British dominions, under a stadtholder, lieutenant of the kings of England.

Such hath been invariably the courfe of human affairs, that, wherever a country hath been originally divided into a number of finall free independent flates, the necessity of a common referee, who hath power fufficient over all to carry into execution those regulations and remedies which are required by all, hath always obliged these feveral flates to create forme one fuch referee amongst themselves, or to call in one from without. If this establishment is formed on preconceived modes of policy, the government may be that of laws: If it be only dragged into existence by power and force, the establish-

* Vide Appendix, Nº III.

ment

ment must be, as it always has been, the government of men. Nor can the community arrive even at that wretched state of peace, founded in a deprivation of freedom, but through a feries of the most depressing miferies, in the dreadful trial of war.

If Great Britain and her Colonies are come to that dreadful crifis, that they are no longer to remain on their old flanding: If there cannot be a British union: may the Americans see and be convinced, that the fafest and happiest form of an American union, is that * whereof a British Stadtholder, Lieutenant of the crown, may have the lead, command, and government, under such establishments as derive from preconceived

A STATE OF A STATE OF

* Vide Appendix, Nº III. Notæ breviores tangentes Statum & Gubernationem Provin. Unitarum fub aufpiciis Eliz. Reginæ, 1589.

This paper gives a model in fact, that may explain what I fuggeft here only in theory: and does, at the fame time, point out what may come in future event, if the prefent crifis is not wifely and firmly managed. I had intended to have added a commentary on these notes, applying them to the state of our provinces and Colonies; but the more I have read them, the more clearly I faw that fuch was unnecessary.

That the publick, whom it concerns, may also fee, what were, in the year 1754, the fentiments of our Colonies, collected in an authentic manner, on this subject, I have also added a * plan proposed and unanimously agreed to in congress, and fent over to Great Britain.

* Appendix, No. IV.

modes

n, the gommunity of peace, om, but ling mi-

are come y are no ding : If may the that the American Itholder, the lead, uch eftaonceived

tangentes b aufpiciis

ay explain es, at the e event, if naged. I lefe notes, ind Coloc clearly I

r allo fee, f our Cos fubject, nimoufly ritain.

modes

modes of policy, before it shall be driven on by force ! And may Britain have the temper, the spirit, and the wisdom, to take fuck lead !

As to the forms of fuch establishment, it will be time enough to speak to those, when the spirit of policy shall call for them —What concerns all, should be considered of all.

I have here ftated that alternative in which the politics of this kingdom, respecting America, must be engaged, if we quit the old standing: Yet as I have, in every thing that I have faid in public, in every thing which I have written or done, laboured to fet matters on that ground—and as I still hope (if God, for the great ends of his providence, has not decreed otherwise) that we may fall back again to it: I rest all my hopes and wishes for the welfare and existence of the British empire on that alone. The old boundaries are known, and are those of peace—any new ones must be set

G 4

POST-

A state of the second second

「「「「「「」」」

(89)

POSTSCRIPT.

CINCE I had written the foregoing trea-T tife, I have received the Inftructions of the Provincial Deputies in Penfylvania given to their Reprefentatives: together with the argumentative part of the draught of these instructions, published separately, as * an Effay on the Constitutional Power of Great Britain over the Colonies in America.

The declared purport of these Instructions, and of this Effay, are the fame as that of the foregoing treatife; namely, "+ the tracing " a line between the rights of the mother " country, and those of the Colonies;" to the end, that they, " ‡ attaining fome de-" gree of certainty concerning their lives, " liberties, and properties," " || Harmony " between Great Britain and those Colonies " may be promoted, and established on a " constitutional foundation :" fuch, as that

* Printed in Philadelphia, and reprinted by J. Almon, London 1774. 1 Preface. || P. 24.

+ P. 33.

" they

" they and their posterity may for ever re-" main fubordinate to and dependent upon the " parent state:" " * Which submission, " (they fay) our reason approves, our affec-" tion dictates, our duty commands, and " our interest enforces." Under this idea, the Instructions and the Essay demand, from me at least, the most attentive examination. These professions coming from the whole body of a ferious people, in fo ferious a crifis of affairs, deferve every attention that every man who wishes peace to the British empire can give them. The draughtiman of these papers has, in a former work, shewn himfelf to be fo ingenious and acute a reasoner, fo able a writer, and is fo univerfally looked up to in America, as an honeft and confcientious man, that every thing which he writes on this fubject, deferves to be thoroughly and deliberately examined.

The line which is here laid down in the Inftructions, and defcribed in the argumentative part, in the Effay, runs a very different courfe from that which my analyfis hath led me in: and I am *forry* to fee it propofed *under fuch a queftionable form*, that, I fear, it is never likely to become A LINE OF PACIFICATION, as not being, I think,

drawn

^{*} P. 53.

ever repon the niffion, r affecis, and nis idea, d, from ination. whole a crifis at every empire of these n' himeasoner, looked confcie writes hly and

i in the argua very malyfis fee it , that, LINE think,

drawn

drawn on conftitutional ground; nor ftanding on the true "boundary." It appears to me to come forward beyond this boundary, not fimply as a defence covering the rights and liberties of the Colonies, but erected as an advanced post, fortified againft, what, I think, the true and conftitutional fovereignty of the mother state. I shall therefore endeavour to state and examine it, both on its own principles, and by those which I have, by a careful analysis, been led up to.

The idea of this line has been formed under contemplation of fome "* original con-" tract" between Great Britain and the American Colonies, on reciprocal terms of fovereignty and fubordination; which contract actum habens tranfeuntem, hath never been defined, never mutually underftood, fo as to be fixed; and which is, at length, by a total mifunderftanding, come to an abfolute mifalliance: Which, therefore, according to this idea must be now de novo formed, by "† a mutual compact," on intirely new ground, fuiting the prefent relation of the contracting parties, " not to be altered in " future ‡ without mutual confent."

In order to have any ground whereon to draw this line, various preliminaries are re-

> * P. 55. + P. 25. ‡ P. 27. quired

quired to be fettled. Great Britain must make fundry renunciations of powers faid to be assumed beyond right: its legislature is required to repeal many of its acts, as inconfistent with the constitutional foundation; whereon the reasonings and the instructions of the provincial delegates determine that this line must stand.

92)

(

I fhall ftate and examine these preliminaries, as contained in this present ultimatum, which is never to be "* relin-" quished nor intermitted;" " † every mo-" dification and qualification of which is " inadmissible."

1. The first article requires a remunciation, on the part of Great Britain " of all " the powers under the statute of the 35th " of Hen. VIII. c. 2. " An act for the trial " of treasons committed out of the King's " dominions." It would be unworthy the importance of the prefent confideration, to cavil at the extent given in words to this requisition; the delegates can only mean, fo far as concerns the subject resident within the jurifdictions of the Colonies.

Those who think there is a doubt (amongst whom I have stated myself to be one) whe-

+ P. 27.

* P 26.

ther

ain must s'faid to slature is , as inundation; tructions ine that

prelimient *ulti-** relinvery mowhich is

enuncia-" of all the 35th the trial e King's rthy the tion, to this renean, fo thin the

imongft e) whe-

ther

ther the purvue of this act, (made before there were Colonies, and having respect only to fuch fituations, out of bis Majesty's dominions, where jurisdictions were not established for legal remedy, and execution of justice, in cafe of treasons to committed) was ever meant to extend to any parts within bis Majesty's dominions, where jurifdictions were erected for the trials of fuch; and from the judgment of which there lies no appeal in fuch cafes; may think this requisition unneceffary. But if, couched under this demand, the Colonists expect, that Great Britain should renounce all means of remedy against treasons committed, while the governments and judicatories of the Colonies cannot, or do not operate against fuch overtacts, as go to the denying their dependence on, and fubordination to, the mother country-they can be confidered only as requiring the fate of the mother country to renounce the powers and right of felf-prefervation; and as requiring it at the moment in which the fuppofed conduct of the Colonists puts the regions of the Colonies in that very predicament which was the ground of this ftatute : For if treafons are committed in the Colonies, and abetted, or at least not restrained, and punished by the authorities established there; that state of things must be confidered as an absolute diffolution of their government, government, fo far as it derives from the crown, and they stand in the cafe to which the burvue of this act goes.

In the ordinary courfe of *colonial* government, and in ordinary cafes, where and when the powers of the crown can act, and have legal remedy against treasons; it is furely of the true spirit of colonial government, that the subject resient in the Colonies should be tried by his peers, within their own internal jurisdictions, to which they are amenable, and from which there lies no appeal in criminal cafes.

The next renunciation required of Great Britain is, (as there expressed) of all powers of internal legislation. Instead of objecting to the expression, I will take the intent of it: It means all power of foreign legislation, acting from without, on the internal rights of the community over which such legislation, external to that community, is exercifed.

I cannot here add to what I have already written on this point, either in defcribing the difference between internal and external, provincial and national legiflation; or in marking the precife boundary between the rights of government of Great Britain, and those om the

governnd when nd have s furely rnment, Colonies in their they are s no ap-

of Great l powers objecting ntent of giflation, al rights legiflais exer-

already fcribing xternal, or in een the in, and thofe (95)

those of the Colonies. As I have defined and described colonial government, I have there shown, that in the intendment and remembrance of law, the power of parliament, as a supreme censorial or remedial power, must be supposed to have a right to go to all cafes whatfoever; yet that in the ordinary exercife thereof, there must be of right " a line " beyond which her authority cannot ex-" tend;" and that fo long as the Colonies continue (as what they are) fubordinate communities, having political liberty; this power must be bounded by those internal rights, which that internal political liberty requires, as effential to it. But if, when the Colonies talk of a " boundary," they go in their intendment to a claim of * " an ex-" clufive right of internal legiflation," which is to exclude the power of parliament in all cafes whatfoever; --- they forget " the old " ftanding," on which they were by " ori-" ginal contract" first put; and on which they have always hitherto flood. In the room of colonial, aiming to erect a national government within their jurifdictions, they themselves bring forward the necessity of the exertion of provincial, or external government, on the part of the mother country.

The next renunciation required of Great P. 72. Britain

180 180

Britain is, that of all power of imposing taxes and duties, both internal and external. Great Britain has repealed the act, by which it did exert that power of laying an internal tax : I believe the Colonies perfectly understand that that point is given up for ever: But if they cannot enjoy their victory without the triumph, they must wait until, conquered, we furrender at diferention. It is not of the temper, nor of the fpirit of pacification, to require this open teft of humiliation from us. - But even the open renunciation of the right of laying internal taxes, would not fuffice-They pass the line of their jurifdiction, and advance upon us in our own empire; requiring of Great Britain a renunciation of a right to impose, within its own jurisdiction, taxes and duties, external to the jurifdiction of the Colonies. They, who will not, in the rigour of their jealoufy, fuffer Great Britain to conceive, that cafes may arife in which it may have a right to call for aid, by imposing taxes within their exclusive jurifdictions; advance upon us with a declaration, That their rights go, even within our jurisdiction, to the excluding Great Britain from imposing taxes and duties on any property passing the bounds of its own jurifdiction, if such property passing out of their jurifdiction is, or going to pass into, is going to be, their property.- As I find no reafons

(96)

ng taxes Great h it did nal tax : derstand : But if lout the nquered, ot of the ation, to on from ation of s, would their juour own a renuns own jul to the hey, who jealoufy, hat cases right to hin their us with go, even ng Great luties on its own g out of s into, is find no reafons

reasons either in the Instructions, or in the Effay, whereon this claim can be grounded; I have again carefully read over that very ingenious composition, the Farmer's Letters; and I do declare, I have not acuteness sufficient to find any ground, or any reafon whereon the claim can be founded; if I could, as I with fincerely to examine it, I would candidly and fairly ftate it. On the contrary, every reafoning which I can draw either from theory or practice; from the principles of the British constitution; from those of the establishments of the Colonies; or from acknowledged and allowed exertions of government; eftablishes the right which Great Britain has to lay port duties, and calls for and justifies the exertion of it. Nay further, the Colonies themfelves have constantly exercised and exerted a right of the fame kind, on their own boundaries, by an impost laid and collected on goods coming from without, and paffing those boundaries. I cannot therefore but hope, that this claim is but an out-post, which they mean to maintain only in order to parly and treat for the main works-It ftands within the line of the acting jurifdiction of Great Britain, and, unless they mean to render all pacification impracticable-they must " relinquish it."

Vol. II.

Great

Great Britain has yet another renunciation to make-It must renounce all power of regulating and reftricting the trade of the Colonies, except on fuch principles, and under fuch limitations, as are laid down in the Inftructions, and in the Effay *. " As to the " power of regulating trade (fay they) our " opinion is, that it is legally vefted in par-" liament, not as a supreme legislature over " the Colonies, but as the supreme legislature " and representative of the parent flate, and " the only judge between her and her chil-4 C dren, in commercial interefts, which the " nature of the cafe, in the progress of " their growth, admitted." They fubmit to these restrictions, as imposed upon them by the representative of a sovereign state (acting in parts foreign to its jurifdiction of legillature) without reference had to the participation of their will, in a fimilar manner. as the King acts in fœderal and foreign tranfactions +, without the confent of the nation; and as he did (for fo great pains are taken in the Effay to state it) originally in matters of commerce. They had rather be fuppofed to fubmit to this fovereign, as a fuperior power; imposing unequal conditions on an inferior, than to allow the parliament of Great Britain to derive its right of fo act-

2 1-1

(98)

* P. 110.

Autor

+ P. 113.

ing,

unciation er of rethe Cond under the Inis to the ney) our in parture over giflature late, and her chilhich the ogrefs of y submit on them state (acton of lethe parr manner. ign tranfe nation; re taken h matters e supposfuperior ns on an ment of fo act-

13.

ing,

preme legislature; which supposition might be conftrued to include their will. * " Thus " we maintain, that with regard to Fo-" REIGN AFFAIRS, the parent original " state is, ' the delegate or representative' " of the intire dominions ; " the fovereign " power quoad hoc, is vested in her. Her " acts, under this power, ' irrevocably bind " the whole nation.' But yet this power " by no means implies a fupreme legifla-" ture.'-" It does not infer supreme le-" gillature over us, that the limited autho-" rity of King, Lords, and Commons, is " used in cloathing regulations of trade, with " the form of law. The Commons joining " in the law is not material. The differ-" ence is only in the mode of affent: theirs " is express; ours is implied, as the affent of " the whole nation is in the preceding in-" ftances." They conceive the exercise of this power to be, an act of state, not an act of parliament; although it be exercised by statutes made in parliament-and although the confent of the Lords and Commons makes it fuch.-They confider this confent to be a mere matter of form, given indeed by the two branches of parliament expressly, but not material, any more than their confent,

> * P. 125. H 2

which

irz, from a supposition of its being a fu-

which is implied. When they " * concede " that this power is legally vefted in parlia-" ment," and fubmit to its over-rule, it is on this prudential confideration, That even " + if these Colonies were sovereign states, " they would in all probability be reftricted " to their prefent portion." Under this idea of the right of parliament, they conceive themselves on one part, and Great Britain on the other, to be two contracting parties, and themselves as bound fædere inequali; yet on as good terms as, in the prefent progress of their growth, they could have obtained, were they independent fovereign The idea of fuch a fæderal comftates. pact may fuit those, who have accustomed themfelves to conceive of the Colonies as states, having both external as well as intermal fovereign jurifdiction; that is, as flates, fui juris: But to those in whose minds the idea of Colonies arife, as being not states, but communities within the state of Great Britain; all these reasonings, and all the ground whereon they stand, vanish with the baseless vision. The parliament makes rules " t by statutes," which are acts of parliament, to regulate and reftrict all kinds of commerce which is carried on within the dominions of the empire ;--- and also for the

+ P. 117.

* P. 117.

‡ P. 125.

raifing

concede n parliaile, it is hat even n ftates, restricted der this ney conreat Briting pardere inehe present uld have lovereign ral comcustomed lonies as as interas states, hinds the ot states, of Great all the with the kes rules f parliakinds of thin the b for the

> P. 125. raifing

(101)

raifing a revenue therefrom, in return for the protection which government gives to it. It may in fome of these laws, as a matter of fæderal prudence, have respect to the pacta et conventa, in which it stands related to fome foreign fovereign states : But even this confideration cannot operate either on its right or its power, with respect to communities included in, and being dependent fubordinate parts of its empire. It acts in every cafe as fupreme legiflature (the commune concilium regni :) And the power which is conceded " to be legally vefted in par-" liament," is vefted in it as fuch, and must be obeyed as fuch. If the supposition be true, that its acts, as acts of state, operate over the Colonies, without reference had to their implied will, " which is not material," in matter of regulation and reftriction of trade; it must on the same supposition operate to the raifing a revenue therefromwithout that confent. However, let us defcribe the power by whatever theory we may; the fact is, as the Effay confesses, " That this power of regulation is the only " band that can hold us together : and it is " formed on one of those original contracts " which only can be a foundation of just " authority." Parliament therefore cannot

> * P. 123. H 3

make

make the renunciation required under this head, without risking the dissolution of the empire; which parliament itself cannot be justified in doing. A revision of the whole fystem of the laws of trade, and of the regulations and refrictions refpecting the trade of the Colonies and Plantations, is neceffary. I have in part endeavoured to explain this; and, if I had any hopes of the least attention being given, at this hour, to these matters, I would further endeavour to explain it. And I shall always think that, whenever fuch revision shall be undertaken, every attention and deference ought to be paid by parliament to the reprefentations of the Colonies, as a matter of justice as well as of prudence: for I have always thought they ought to be actually represented in that high court.

II. Great Britain having made renunciations of the feveral powers as above required: the *Parkiament* alfo *must repeal* feveral of its *atts*; and first, those respecting the military establishment, quarters, &c. in America. I, who think that, both by the constitution and laws of the empire, the military is, and must be always, as the force of the community, subordinate to the supreme civil magistrate—to the King as fuch;—and in the Colonies, to the Governor as his lieutenant, er this of the not be whole the reg the is neto exof the our, to vour to k that, rtaken, to be ions of as well hought in that

(103)

tenant, or locum-tenens: I, who have always thought, and do still think, that no letter of a fecretary of state, nor any executive power whatever, can alter this fundamental constitution; who know no law that gives a fupreme command to any military commander, paramount to the fupreme civil magistrate in the Colonies; who think that the governor and captain general of each province must have, as he hath, " the command of all " forts and forces" within his jurifdiction; do not know what laws in this cafe are to be repealed. I, who have, almost fingly and unfupported, endeavoured, both in and out of parliament, to bring forward regulations that should fix the practice according to law and the constitution, and who shall for ever act and perfevere in the fame endeavours; must, on this occasion, on examination of, and in answer to the claims here made, declare, That where the defence of the whole empire against hostile attacks from without, or the prefervation of it from fubverfion, and diffolution arifing within, calls forth the fupreme power; the King hath, of right ought to, and must necessarily, have a supreme military powerwhich goes paramount over the whole, with every attendant power of law martial, that is neceffary to the maintenance and efficiency of fuch.—This is a dictatorial power lodged in the crown, to be exercised, (jusju populi,) H 4 under

(104)

under the authority of parliament, ne quid detrimenti capiat ne/publica. The defence of the empire, and the support of the state, 's is * a power of a preferving protecting "nature," and is a trust reposed in the King: He must therefore have all powers necessary to the exercise of that trust. powers

As to the laws for quartering and providing for the troops in their quarters, and on their march in America; they were (I have a right to fay) conceived and framed with a fpecial regard had to the *internal* legislation and jurifdiction of the Colonies. If there have been any alterations made, which depart from the original idea on which they were framed; it hath arifen from that, that the legislatures and jurifdictions of fome of the Colonies have endeavoured to obstruct, instead of making regulations for the due execution of, the public fervice.

Any requisition therefore of repeal, in fuch case, becomes a demand on Great Britain to lay down her arms, to furrender at diferetion, to receive fuch terms as shall be dictated to her, and that in the moment that the Colonies are on the point of advancing with their arms in their hands.

1. 29. 18 he

As survey and the Prilon and the second

e quid ncesof ftate. tecting in the owers roburos v milt rovidand on I have with a illation there ch deh they t, that bme of struct, he due

n fuch ain to difcree dict that incing (105)

As to a repeal of the establishment of the courts of admiralty, I, who have never approved the rigour of them, where not neceffary; and have, where it was my duty fo to do, given my opinion against fuch; must fay, that while the conduct of the Colonists renders this every day more and more neceffary; that very neceffity, if nothing elfe would, justifies the measure, and renders it impoffible for government (unlefs it means to decline all power of regulating and reftricting the trade of the Colonies) to repeal those acts which establish those courts. If any future practicable measure can be found. (fuch as creating regulations which shall execute themfelves, which I think there may be) then I should hope to fee the rigour of these courts abated in many instances. But these are measures of peace, and not (I fear) of the prefent hour,

As to the power in parliament of altering, and even of diffolving, the conftitutions and charters of government, whereon the Colonies have fettled and been eftablifhed, I have faid, and explained how I think, according to the principles of *colonial* government, that, exerted and exercifed in the ordinary courfe of government, it would rather become a matter of power, than of right*like the perpetual Dictator, it would be a tyranny*

ranny. But then, from fuch principles to draw the conclusion. That there does not exist in the fovereign state, in the King, Lords, and Commons, affembled in parliament (as the commune concilium regni) a fupreme cenforial or remedial power of felf-prefervation, against fuch principles of revolt or diffolution as may arife in the Coloniesis directly incompatible with the idea of colonial government. Any repeal of any neceffary acts of this power, can never be required, by any perfons who do not mean, on the destruction of colonial to erect national independent government. Whether fome of the acts of this nature were absolutely necesfary, might have been a question, if the subfequent acts of fome of the Colonies had not fince put it out of all question.

The ground thus cleared, if, on these propositions, it is to be so cleared; and the mother country, and her Colonies, having thus fettled the relation in which they are to stand and to treat—if it is to be so fettled for the future; all that follows is peace,—and I hail the promised omen.

The propositions which hold out the fettling a revenue in lieu of fervices; and the declaration, that the granting aids and fubfidies, which although of good-will, is yet 4 ples to ves not King, parliaa fuelf-prerevolt oniesof coany nebe rezan, oh ational fome of v necelie fubad not

fe prond the having are to led for -and I

1 11 12

d the fubis yet fo to far due from the fubject, that the withholding or refufing fuch, when required in aid and protection of the flate, is a violation of a plain duty; these propositions, I say, are of the very spirit and effence of our conflictution; and fland on the precedents which, from the earliest times, it hath itself acted upon in its progress to the restoration of its liberties.

The fixing a certain for an uncertain fervice, is of the fpirit, and was the principal purport of the Magna Charta. The fettling the mode of that fervice, by a composition of a certain income, paid to government in lieu of this fervice, hath been the constant line of negotiation and compact between the King and people of our state in the best of times.

This propofal, as it comes from the whole body of the people of Penfylvania—and may come as a general proposition from the whole body of the people of America—should be met with the most favourable eye, and deferves the most ferious confideration.

A certain income in lieu of certain fervices; and a fixed and permanent revenue in lieu of all port duties, must mean a fixed proportion. It would be abfurd to fuppofe this to mean a do-

a determinate modus (like that fettled in lieu of tithes) fettled now, in the first stages " of "the progress of the growth" of the Colonies, as the rate or quota, which should be deemed their just proportion in all the fucceeding relations of their proportion to the mother country, and amongst one another. This income, therefore, must be for laid, in fair and equitable proportion at prefent, that as the Colonies encrease, it may so encrease, as still always to hold the fame proportion. If the taxes which shall be laid and appropriated by the Colonies to the raifing this revenue, be laid according to the prefent mode observed throughout the Colonies in general, on eftates real and perfonal, and on polls; together with a tonnage to be paid by those Colonies who have a maritime intereft and fhipping; fuch tax might be duly proportioned at the outfet, and would hold the fame proportion in all future stages of the increase, decrease, or stationary situation of each Colony. If a land tax (in which cafe the quit-rents ought to be given up) rated according to the real proportionate value of lands in each province, and in each district of each province, was laid as the ground of this revenue-this too would hold the fame equitable proportion as it fet out with. One very material branch of this certain income might arife, in the fairest of all proportions,

(108)

(109)

proportions, out of the interest of a general loan advanced in paper by government, as defcribed in fection 2d of the fixth chapter of the first part of this work. But I fear, although our government has never yet been able to fee the benefit and advantage which might be derived from it to Great Britain; the Colonies fee it too clearly, ever to adopt this now, unless they have the creation and management of it.

JIES JAY VE VALL .

Byothese hints I do not mean to dictate or prefcribe; I only throw them out as theoretic quæries of what may be, from experimental knowledge, which I once had, of what might have been. But as I have been long removed from all connection of bufinefs with the Colonies, and fo many changes in the affairs, interests and powers of them, have devolved in fuch rapid fucceffion one upon another, I now doubt, where I once thought I knew. Of this point, however, I am certain, That if the rate and proportion of any revenue, which shall, on "mutual com-" pact," be settled, be not fixed so as of itself to follow all future relations between Great Britain and the Colonies, under the like proportion ; this fettlement, inftead of fan union, showill prove an unfailing and plene "tiful fource of diffentions :"So fettled as to hold its propertion, it may prove the I to time adv or in them smarhappy Printer ogsånd

ALC: A in lieu es of Colould be ne sucto the iother. aid, in t, that crease, ortion. approg this orefent nies: in and on e paid ne ine duly l hold res of uation which h∘up) te vaeach s the hold tout icer# of all lions,

happy fource of an union that shall be indiffoluble.

This first step of peace, failing back to the old ground of the old standing, is actuated by a fpirit " of # loyalty to their " fovereign, of respect to the parent-state, " and of affection to their native country :" And the next, I mean their acquiescence in our fill retaining THE MONOPOLY of their labour and commerce, derives (I will hope) from a temper of unfeigned moderation. - It breathes, I am fure, that fpirit.-" + From the mother " country ALONE (fay these propositions) " we shall continue to receive manufactures. " To her alone we shall continue to carry " the vaft multitude of enumerated articles " of commerce; the exportation of which " her policy has thought fit to confine to " herfelf. With fuch parts of the world " only, as the hath appointed us to deal, we " ihall continue to deal; and fuch commodi-" ties only, as the hath permitted us to bring " from thence, we shall continue to bring."

The next article, rightly grounded, and conducted with temper, and a fpirit of equity—with a practical, yet fcientific knowledge of commerce—may become the chief

1.4

* P. 20. + P. 20.

corner-

(111)

corner-stone in this edifice of peace; I mean that article which proposes the fettling the courfes and the bounds of colonial commerce. I have already faid for much on this head in general; and there remains for much to be faid, en detail, whenever this matter shall be taken up, between Great Britain and her Colonies; that to speak further in general would be but tedious repetition: and to go into an inapplicable detail might hazard the doing more harm than good.

I shall here conclude this Postfcript in the words, and with the fentiments of the inftructions given by the provincial delegates of Pensylvania to their representatives, by applying them to ourselves here at home: "To us may it appear, at this alarming period, our duty to God, to our country, to ourselves, and to our posterity, to exert our utmost ability in promoting and establishing *barmony between Great Britain and ber Colonies*, ON A CONSTITUTIONAL FOUNDATION !"

it sit of

APPEN-

مهائر صدين أله

indif-

ckito g, is their -ftate, try :" in our labour temathes. nother tions) tures. carry rticles which ne to world l, we modibring ng."

, and it of nowchief

rner-

2000

2 44 6

2.2.2

· · · · · · · · · · · · · ·

N. N. S.

113) 6

APPENDIX.

N° Í.

Extract of a Letter from the Right Hon. George Grenville, to Governor Pownall. Dated, Wotton, July 17th, 1768.

Am very fenfible of the honour you do to me, both in this, and in the Addrefs prefixed to the former editions of your treatife upon the Administration of the Colonies; and am much obliged to you for the expressions of your regard and good opinion. You fay, very truly, in the beginning of your present Address, that our opinions differed on feveral points: but we agree intirely in our wishes, that the constitutional powers of this kingdom, and the fixed government of the laws may prevail, Vol. II. and the rights of the people be established upon true political liberty.

114)

(

As to the great question of our parliament's granting to America a competent number of representatives to fit in our House of Commons, you are no stranger to the declarations I repeatedly made in the Houfe, at the time when the repeal of the stampact was agitated; That, if fuch an application should be properly made by the Colonies to parliament, in the fame manner as those which were made from Chester and Durham, and probably from Wales, it would, in my opinion, be intitled to the most ferious and favourable confideration. continue still in the fame fentiments ; but I am much afraid, that neither the people of Great Britain, nor those of America, are sufficiently apprized of the danger which threatens both, from the present state of things, to adopt a measure, to which both the one and the other feem INDISPOSED. Some of the Colonies, in their address to the crown against some late acts of parliament, have, if I mistake not, expressly difdained it; and I do not think it has been kindly received in Great Britain, when it has been thrown out in parliament, or ftarted in any pamphlet or printed paper. The fullest conviction of its necessity, and the hearty concurrence, both of the government li.F.

olished

11.51.4

parliapetent Houle he de-House, ftampoplicane Coner as er and les, it to the ion. I but I cople of re sufreatens o adopt e other hies, in me late e not, think Britain, ament, paper. y, and overnment ment and of the people, are indifpenfibly neceffary to fet to great a machine in motion, as that of uniting all the outlying parts of the British dominions into one fystem.——For my own part, I shall wait the event with concern, and shall be ready to give any assistance I can, whenever I see any practicable road opened to our fastety.

na tasto aporta til de 7 milion. Milio e de casto de 19 milio de 17

I 2

Nº II.

10.19 11 10 10 10¹

1.00

and the state of t

Nº II.

Letter from Benjamin Franklin, Esquire, to Governor Shirley. Dated, Boston, Dec. 22d, 1754.

SIR,

SINCE the conversation your Excellency was pleafed to honour me with, on the fubject of uniting the Colonies more intimately with Great Britain, by allowing them representatives in parliament, I have fomething further confidered that matter, and am of opinion, that fuch an union would be very acceptable to the Colonies, provided they had a reafonable number of reprefentatives allowed them; and that all the old acts of parliament, reftraining the trade, or cramping the manufactures of the Colonies, be at the fame time repealed; and the British subjects, on this fide the water, put, in those respects, on the same footing with those in Great Britain, 'till the new parliament, reprefenting the whole, shall think it for the interest of the whole to re-enact some or all of them.

uire, to n, Dec.

ellency on the e intig them e someer, and buld be rovided esentathe old ade, or blonies, e Bribut, in g with parliahink it ft fome

117) (

It is not that I imagine fo many reprefentatives will be allowed the Colonies, as to have any great weight by their numbers; but I think there might be fufficient to occafion those laws to be better and more impartially confidered; and perhaps to overcome the private interest of a petty corporation, or of any particular let of artificers or traders in England; who heretofore feem, in fome inftances, to have been more regarded than all the Colonies, or than was confistent with the general interest, or best national good. I think too, that the government of the Colonies by a parliament, in which they are fairly represented, would be vaftly more agreeable to the people, than the method lately attempted to be introduced by royal instructions, as well as more agreeable to the nature of an English constitution, and to English liberty: And that fuch laws, as now feem to be hard on the Colonies (when judged by fuch a parliament for the best interest of the whole) would be more chearfully fubmitted to, and more early executed.

I fhould hope too, that by fuch an union, the people of Great Britain, and the people of the Colonies, would learn to confider themselves, not as belonging to different communities with different interests, but to one

I 3

one community with one interest; which, I imagine, would contribute to strengthen the whole, and greatly lessen the danger of future separations.

It is, I fuppofe, agreed to be the general interest of any state, that its people be numerous and rich; men enow to fight in its defence, and enow to pay fufficient taxes to defray the charge: for these circumstances tend to the fecurity of the ftate, and its protection from foreign powers: but it feems not of fo much importance, whether the fighting be done by John or Thomas, or the tax paid by William or Charles. The iron manufacture employs and enriches the Britifh fubjects; but is it of any importance to the state, whether the manufacturers live at Birmingham, or Sheffield, or both, fince they are still within its bounds, and their wealth and perfons at its command? Could the Gocdwin fands be laid dry by banks, and lands equal to a large country thereby gained to England, and prefently filled with English inhabitants; would it be right to deprive fuch inhabitants of the common privileges enjoyed by other Englishmen, the right of vending their produce in the fame ports, or of making their own shoes, because a merchant or a shoemaker, living in the old land, might fancy it more for

ch, I n the *uture*

neral e nuin its ces-to ances profeems er the or the e iron Brince to live at e they vealth d the , and ereby filled right comglifhuce in own haker, more for for his advantage to trade, or to make floes for them? Would this be right, even if the land was gained at the expense of the flate? and would it not feem lefs right, if the charge and labour of gaining the additional territory to Britain, had been borne by the fettlers themfelves? And would not the hardship appear yet greater, if the people of the new country fhould be allowed no reprefentatives in the parliament enacting fuch impofitions? Now I look on the Colonies as fo many counties gained to Great Britain, and more advantageous to it, than if they had been gained out of the fea, around its coafts, and joined to its land : For being in different climates, they afford greater variety of produce, and materials for more manufactures; and being feparated by the ocean, they encreafe much more its fhipping and And fince they are all included in feamen. the British empire, (which has only extended itfelf by their means, and the ftrength and wealth of the parts, is the strength and wealth of the whole) what imports it to the general state, whether a merchant, a smith, or a hatter, grow rich in Old or in New England? If through increase of people, two fmiths are wanted, for one employed before, why may not the new fmith be allowed to live and thrive in the new country, as well as the old one in the old? In fine, why I 4. fhould fhould the countenance of the flate be partially afforded to its people, unlefs it be moft in favour of those who have most merit : and if there be any difference, those who have contributed to enlarge Britain's empire and commerce, encrease her strength, her wealth, and the numbers of her prople, at the risque of their lives and private fortunes, in new and fridange countries, methinks, ought rather to expect fome preference.

With the greatest respect, and esteem, I have the honour to be,

Your Excellency's obedient, and moft humble fervant, B. FRANKLIN.

Nº. III.

To Governor Shirley.

(121)

N° III.

Notæ breviores tangentes statum & gubernationem provinciarum unitarum, sub auspiciis Elizabethæ Reginæ.

n of the second se

HE feventeen provinces of the Lowe countreys, which in times paft were under feveral lords and princes, and fo every one of them governed by it felf according to the cuftomes and rightes of the fame, being most commonlie in quarrell and queftion with eache other, yea the provinces in themfelves, particularely betwene towne and towne, which grew to fuch factions whereout divisions followed, were at the laste, by alliances, usurpations, conquests and otherwise, brought at laste under one lord and prince, and confequentlie gouverned by such direction and course as the occafions require.

And the faid provinces, having bin thus brought under the houfe of Bourgoingne, and fo continued from the time of the good Ducke Phillip, untell that the prefent K. Phillip (who, upon the endevours, by his minifters ufed, to bring in and eftablifhe the Spanifh

parmoft erit ; who emgth, ople, forrerefe-

m, Į

ant, LIN.

III.

Spanish inquisition and tyrannie, was forfaken and rejected by the faid countreys) were gouverned still according to the use of the faid house and court of Bourgoingne, which course of gouverment hath bin obferved, notwithstanding the breach between the faid king and countreis.

And altho' the generall states, as chief members of the faid provinces, and in a forte deputies of the people and comminaltie, *have ufed and continued general meetings*, from time to time, to take order for the prefervation of the state of thes countreys; yet have they ever found requesit and needfull, that the state of this gouverment and authoritie therof should be committed *to fome few in nomber*, with a head or chief over them; whertoo a man of calling was thought most convenient.

And, becaus they found none fuch among themfelves, in refpect of a kinde of equalitie that both in their ftate and other ftates hath ever been, and ftill is, between men of nobilitie and others equall in degree of calling, though in difcent, parentage, living and otherwife different, which caufeth contempt by the emulation and jelofie that accompanie greatnes, wherby they ar *loathe to yeeld to each other*, and that the provinces, in like fort s forntreys) ufe of ingne, n obetwçen

s chief a forte inaltie, s, from efervaet have ll, that thoritie few in them; t moft

among qualitie es hath of nocalling, ng and ntempt npanie yeeld to in like fort (123)

fort affected to themfelves, did stand upon tearmes of prerogatives, privileges, &c. yea the particular townes within eache province, wherby inconveniences did diverflie growe daily; the faid provinces or ftates, to provide against the fame, and that their state might bee orderlie ruled, did, both before they all joyned and tooke the caufe in hand against the faid King, yea while they have bin united, and fince they were fevered, with the aforefaid emulation, jealofie, and other like defects in men, caufed ever feek fome FORREIN PERSONAGE TO BEE THEIR HEAD AND GOVERNOUR; wherof I will fommarelie touch the courfe. Holland and Zeeland in the first troubles.

Altho' they had the Prince of Orange, one of the wifeft, fufficienteft and most experemented perfons in Europe, confyderyng all the qualities and rare partes were in him, fent to the Queen's Majestie, offring their state and all unto her; after the losse of Ziricksea, and that the States opposed against the Spaniards, the Archduke Matthias was fought and fent for; the Duke of Alençon succeeded; who being deceased, the King his brother was earness deceased, the King his brother was earness fulle to accept the countreys; which such such agree agree unto a certain fuecour of men, and A CHIEF PERSONNAGE TO COMMAUND; who befides, with th' affiftance of a counfell of ftate, is to deale for the gouverment of these United Provinces, according to the autoritie by certain points and articles efpeciallie fett downe in the treatie is appointed, and do in fubstance comprehend, tho' not fo particularely enlarged in woords, the plot of the course and gouverment aforementioned, used fince the faid 17 Provinces were reduced under one Prince, which was by a gouvernour general, and a counfell of state; who, without partialitie or particuler respect of state, province, towne, or member of the fame, proceeded and dealt for the good of the generall, either in time of warre or of peace, in all that concerned the wellfare of the faid Provinces.

(124)

This waie of gouverment hath bin alfo obferved and eftablished by provision, during the times that no forrein chief or governour was agreed withall, and abod in thes parts, as may appeare by the inftructions framed for the counfill of flate from time to time, during the life of the late Prince of Orange, and while his fonne Count Maurice was in place, and fucceeded his father.

Out of all which may bee inferred, and doth

nd A who ell of thefe oritie e fett do 'in rticuof the , used duced gouwho, ect of of the of the péace, e faid

fo obng the r was s may r the uring , and place,

and doth

(125)

doth neceffarily follow, that in all times authority and good gouverment were the principall points to maintein this state; which to confirme the more, it is moste evident, that, after the arrivall of the Righte Honnourable the late deceased Earle of Leicester into these partes (tho' the treatie gave him fufficient authority, yea more then hee had otherwife, as matters fucceeded) the states, to the end things mighte be well ordered, and only directed by a generall gouvernour, aflifted by the councel of state, made choise of his Lordship absolutelie to the fame, with commaundement to all particulare governours, and confequentlie to the Colleges or States of the Provinces, and all others, to respect and obey him, and this to remove the difficulties, and inconveniencies afore touched.

How long the graunt and gift of this fuperioritie lafted, and upon what occafion there fell out alteration, were too long to recite; this fuffifing, that all men of flate and jugement may fee, that the popular gouverment being ones in use, whereby matters ar directed to that libertie they best like of, yt is very hard afterwards to bring them under any other fort of commaundement; for finding in any parte their faid libertie, or rather that will reftrained, they did labour by all meanes to reduce things to their owne purpose, the 6 States General referving, fo much as in them is, a kind of juperioritie, and fo onely to feek to have their owne tournes farvid, and not to be ordered by that kinde of gouverment, that heretofore was used, and yet ought to bee used.

Since the refignation of the faid E. of Leicester his gouverment, and that it hath pleafed Her Majeftie to appoint in his place the moste Ho. the L. Willughbe as L. Generall, and Lieutenant to ber Majestie, wherunto the aforesaide States accepted him, with fhew of great liking, and that thei would yeeld unto and use his Lordship with as much respect as the treatie required and appointed, they have framed a new forme of gouverment farr contrarie unto the meaning of the faid treaty, and the method used in former times; feeking more therby to winne time, attending some other accident, which they will interpret fortunate in their particular respect, more than from anie great good that they can looke for to happen to the caufe in general.

Their prefent state standeth thus for the mennes, for the men of warre, and for the gouverment, as followeth;

The

· · · · · ·

A B T

them y to and iveryet

E. of hath place . Gewherwith would th as id apme of ning of n forwinne which partigreat en to

> or the or the The

The Provinces among them do in a manner make acckount, that the contributions to the warres amount to the wonted fomme of twentie thowfand pounds a moneth, which is devided to be aunfwerid by the refpective Provinces, according to their quote or rate they are fet at.

And of these contributions are paid the martiall men, which are devided upon eache province by repartition; wherein, according to the mennes that each province paieth, they contribute and paie monethly to their garrifons, and the other men that belong to their charge lieng in other places.

Alfo they do in like forte paie their gouvernours, fergeant majors of townes, commiffaries of mufters vittailes amunition, and other like officers; and referve befides, for other provisions and charges, fuch money as by the partition and flate of warres is fett downe.

These provinces, or rather the deputed states of the same, doo themselves, after 48 daies to the moneth, by their owne officers, paie the souldiers, and others standing on their repartition, reserving in their owne handes the other remaining monie of their quote, to be paid upon the warrants of the councell councell of state; unto the which they will rest countable of their paiement made to the fouldiers, but therin their owne difcretion and authoritie governes them, as also in paieng of the counfels warrants.

The number of footemen, prefently enterteined and ftanding upon the provinces repartition, is fett downe 15667, and of hors men neere 905; if the companies were complet, the paiement wherof amounteth for the footemen each moneth unto 119820 florins, and the horfemen to 16880 flo. and are for the prefent devided thus for the payements.

Holland Zeland	·8818 2910	footemen,	69086 22233	florins.
Utretcht	900		6600	
Frife	2800		19933	
Geldr.	226		1733	
Overifs.	263		2000	
Drenth.	150	·	1133	
•	1 5667	č.	119820	
Holiand	615	horfemen	12616	florins.
Twenth	1 50		2400	
Brab	140		1783	
	905		16,800	
				There

to the on and ieng of

enterces ref hors were unteth 19820 o flo. for the

florins.

lorins.

There

(129)

There are yet the horfemen of the Count Mœurs, thofe of Wulf, and thofe of Schenk; being all verie ftrong troupes with certaine his foote companies, but have no certain paie as yet ftanding upon the repartition, but after a fort mony prefted to them by thofe of Holland, and fo is don to the annuan of Thiel for 300 men, and they of-Gertrudenberg paie themfelves.

Entertayments paid by the Province.

Holland	8121	florins.
Zeland	2192	
Utrecht	1500	
Frife	1735	
Geldr.	459	
Overifs.	306	
Drenth.	17	

VOL. II.

15402 with 400 flor. in the Rect. gual.

Κ

Other

qualitation License - il and by Ends

Other extraordinarie charges as for am-

and the

Holland Zeland	30148
Drife Utrecht	7688 1800 1000
64 · * 48	40636

Which paiements, acchounting the particulars to a general, amount unto as in the page following. h i

Holland	117073 flor.	3 fouls,	4 d.
Zeland	32113	6	8:
Utrecht	0 100		· · · ·
Frife	24468	6	8
Brab.	2113	6	. 8
Gueld.	2193	111	l.
Overifs.	/	S Jacob	
Dreuth.	1150	6	8
Twenth.	2400		
Fland.	300		
Upon rect.gu		1	

Som. tot. 193658 10 fh.

5 . 1

71

And

And yt doth by the aforefaid calculation appears, that the four contributing provinces do, not paie their monethlie rate in the 200000 flo. and yet, unles it be Utrecht, the others are thought to paie it with a furplus.

And it is to bee confidered that, to fhorten the charges, there are no officers for the field in ordinary paie, onely the Mareschall General, the chief of the artillery, with a controuler, and a General des Viures, with a few ordinary officers and conductors.

Alfo they do receave certain extraordinary contributions, as upon falt, fope, &c. wherby they aunfwere at their willes and diferentian the extraordinarie charges that the counfell of ftate or themfelves do make.

The townes and places that must bee provided with garrifons ar many, as by the note following maie appeare.

(131)

4 d.

82

8

8

8

am

fuch

-02.

1 . 11

1 in A

And

12 Page a se s

15 14 122

In Gelderl.	ςt	ownes	2	forts	houfen.
In theq. of Zut	р 4			4	1 1/2 1 2 2
Overifs.	-				J
Freefl.	3		.7	Ţ	4.844.K.S
Utrecht	5		I		aller as t
Holland	21		10	houfe	n and 2
				ilands	forts.
Zeland	6	* - ()	5	ļ!",	1 2.0 1
Brab. and Flan	n. 3	6	12	5.4	с
Under no Prov	v. 4			4	7.1
			·		
					iflands.
	59		43	20	2

(132)

In which places the above writen troupes and companies of horfe and footemen are placed, and her Majesties men in Berghen and the two cautionarie townes.

Thus much for the mennes, forts; now to proceed to the use and employment therof, which by the treatie appertaines to the Lieutenant of her Majestie and the councel of state, with all that belongeth to the goverment of this state.

The Provinces are divided under certain respective gouvernours.

The Count Maurice over Holland, and Zeland,

Count

oufen.

and 2 orts.

flands.

2

troupes ien are erghen

; now byment ines to e counto the

certain

, and Count

133) (

Count Meurs over Guelder, Utrecht, and Overifiel, Mr. to Assist

Statute 183

And Count William of Naffau, over Frifeland;

And each province befides hath his ordinarie meetings of certain councels, which they terme the Deputed States, and do in that forme meet almost daily in their colladge ; wherof the gouvernour, as chief, cometh in. when he feeth caufe, but hath but a voice ; and there they confult of all matters that concerne their private state, and that thereon dependeth.

The fouldiers, standing in their repartition, they paie themfelves, and by their owne warrants.

If anie men must be fent unto anie province, must passe thorow it, or that anie be called thence and removed, that cannot be don but by the gouverneur, and in his abfence by the faid deputed states of that province, fo that her Majesties lieutenant, and the councel of state, must direct their letters to that end to the faid gouvernour and deputies without anie authoritie to give their owne patents; neither may or can there any fouldiers passe through any province, or en-K 3 ter

ter into anie towne, except they have the private gauvernors patent; fo as the general gouvernor and councells authoritie is therby much impaired; and, if they fhould have anie enterprife or fervice in hand, ere they can have anie men, they muft make the particular gouvernours and deputed flates whence they fhould be had privie therunto, and fo the fervices ar drawen in length, and often neglected, difcovered, and prevented; the faid deputies, being divers times of fondrie humours, if they lift will fuffer no man to bee drawn forth, for making frivolous exceptions.

(134)

In like forte when, upon occasion of the use of any mony for extraordinarie fervice, the faid gouvernour general and councell shall make their warrant upon anie province, it is in the choice of the fame, whether they will aunfwere it; besides that they must most commonlie acquaint them with the cause of employment, and thus are all good fervices hindred; so that this is one of the greatest wrongs offered in respect of the treatie, which appointeth that the councel and gouvernour general should have the difposition of the monie, for the prefervation of the countrey by fea and land; and as these paiments bee made, which the states are not assumed to faie, the councel hath the ve the geneitie is fhould id, ere make d ftates erunto, th, and ented; of fonno man ivolous

of the fervice, ouncell ovince, er they v must th the ll gcod of the of the councel be difvation ind as e states 1 hath the (135)

the disposing of, it is a manner of dealing, as if the gouvernour generall and counfell were under age, and in tutely, wherout fondry inconveniences growe amongst other these, that either the men must still abide in their garrifons, and fo make no other but a defensive warre, which in time will weary them, hazard the loffe of their townes one after another, and confume both theirs and her Majesties mennes and treasure; or els drawing men unto anie fervice in field, to raife the fiege of a place, to make any enterprife or exploit, and that thertoo the men must be had out of several provinces, the paiements must consequentlie bee sent after, which is troublefome and chargeable; the fildiers ar not, neither can be, orderlie paid together, but by fits; fo as ever there is dout of diforders, as of late was fene in the fiege of Berghen, where the men of Utrecht and Friseland were unpaid, and they of Holland but flenderly.

Another thing is also to bee remembred, that so long as their gouverments continew in forme aforesaid, her Majesties lieutenant and counsellors shall never be particularly private of the mennes, the forces, the placing or displacing of men, the strength and weaknes of places, the ennemies practifes or dealing, which the private provinces K_4 neither neither yet shall understand anie perfectness of the state, and the proceedings in matters of the state, and when every private province careth for ytfelf, disposeth of the mony and men, &c. what needes there any other councel or gouverment?

In like forte is to bee fpoken of the admiral and admiralties, who receave and difpole of all the meanes, make for the thipping, discharge them, and handle all matters belonging to that charge, and neither the gouvernour general, nor counfel, once made privie therunto or respected, so as they know not what cometh in of the convoies, the licences, the prizes, or other avantages, proceeding by the fea, neither yet what ftrength they are of, or can make, if nede were, to defend these countreys, or affist her Majestie, and what delays and differring is used by these men, hath appeared by their flowness, when the Spanishe armie came towards England, and thefe countreis, their flacknes in tending over the men and thips for the Portugall voyage, with other like proceedings in occasions dailie falling out.

The inconveniences, that have infewed by this aforefaid kinde of gouverment, and that dailie yet may growe are divers, befides inforted above matter and the and lithness In

- 12163 - Ait-Eli

Etnefs atters aproelmoother

e ad-1. diffhipnatters er the made know he li-, proength re, to jestie, ed by vnefs, Enghes in Pordings

ewed , and efides In In Holland there are divers divisions between those of the northe and fouthe part, alfo the private townes; which in time will breede farther matter, and cannot bee ended without the interpolition of fome fpeciall authorite.

The matters of Utrecht depend in fickle termes, and none can take them up and quiet them to the affuring of the ftate.

Thiel and Bonnuel are not yet reduced to perfect termes with Holland, neither yet with Gelderland, bring in difference under whom they shall reforte.

With the Count of Collemborg, who would hold the towne neuter, is fome difpute, the feate of the place being of importance.

The question with colonel Schinck remains yet unended.

Those of Overifiel have some hartburning against those of Holland, for keeping of certain forts and strengthes in their province by their garrisons, with obeieng or acknowleging those of Overifiel.

The chief officers, captaines, and other martiall

martiall men grow weary, feing they have no chiefs of acchount and authoritic, and that they are tied to fo many obediences by their oathes.

When in garifon townes on the frontiers, any companies bee placed, and that they bee of feverall provinces, the paiements fall out verie diffuied; fome paid in time, others thaie longer, and others now and then not at all contented, which indaungereth the places, confumeth the magafines, maketh hartburnings and divisions.

In Freefland there remaineth still some controversie, and so in other places; and the ending of all these dependeth, by vertew of the treaty, upon the gouvernour general and the counfel of state, the which, if her Majiftie pleafe not to reftore to the authoritie dew unto them, but fuffer this aforefaid kinde of popular gouverment to proceed, shee shal be fure to waste her treasure, to fee her fubjects daily spent in garison townes, without anie furder experience of warres then that fervice will yeeld, to deminishe the honor and reputation of the gouvernour, the officers and nation; and at length have much adoo to recover her owne, when by this langueshing warre all will come at length to fome incertain fuccesse; whereas otherwife,

y have e, and ices by

ontiers, t they nts fall others en not th the naketh

1 fome ind the tew of general if her authoorefaid oceed, ire, to bwnes, warres he the ur, the have en by ength otherwife,

(139)

wife, the aforefaid authoritie being eftablifhed, the meanes and men might bee emploied in fervice abroad, efpecially when the ennemy is thus quiet and in a traunce, not knowing what courfe to take, wherby would be gotten great avantage upon him in divers quarters, as in Brabant, Flanders, towards the Velen, the Twenth, the Drenth, the Ommelands, Groenighen, and other parts; wherby the inhabitants there would be driven to abandon and forfake the places, or els yeald to this fide, and forfake the ennemy; and befides might worke fome divifion amongft the malcontents, who by report are diftated of the Spaniards and Italians.

And if this proceed not by fome meanes from her Majestie, these men will not stirr; for they acchount not so much of their neyhbours, as to help them, wishing rather the continuance of their troubles and mifery, and themselves alone to keep all trade and traffique as they now enjoye; and thus a fewe to serve their private tourns, esteeme not, neither care for the generall.

Wherfore, feing her Majestie hath in fome forte taken the cause of these afflicted countreys in hand, if she may please to continew, and to wait that aforefaid, with such benigne elemencie and gratious jugement, as the

the fame requires, to remove all the passed faults and errors, and fet all in better order in time to come, unleffe her Highnes shall think good to enter furder into the action, and take the fouverainetie or perpetuall protection of these countries, which all good people wifte and bartele defire; the best waie would be to deale roundlie and require the establishment of the gouvernour generall and the counfell of state in their autoritie, with fuch a gouverment as the treatie requireth, and that her Highnes declare her interpretation thereof to bee according to that, which by the lieutenant and counfellors hath bin by writing exhibited unto the State Generall.

And to the end they may perceave her Majefties meaning is to maintaine the treatie in like forte on her fide, it fhal be neceffarie, before all, that the faid L. General's authoritie, according to that apperteineth to his place, bee eftablifhed, and order given that the points of the treatie, concerning his charge over her Majeftie's forces, bee fulfilled, and confequently to begin, to take awaie all occafion of the ftates complaints, to have the companies made complete : to give order, that the mufters may be made orderlie and with affiftaunce of their commiffaries : that the men may be dulie paid, fo pafied order *fhall sction*, *progood beft cquire nerall oritie*, *ie ree her ng to unfelo the*

e her treaeceferal's th to given g his fultake ints, to nade omaid, fo (141)

fo as they charge not the country with prefts: that the full difpoing of the warrants, the placing and difplacing of the capteines, bee left and committed to the L. General: that all captaines do keepe and abide by their companies, or els co quitt them, and fuffer the L. Generall to place others; and laftlie, that no companies bee fuffered to bee fold, nor obtained with favour. without just defart and worthie for hableness and experience of the charge; with other like faultes, which in reason ought to bee redressed and provided against.

And these states feing that her Majestie's order and direction is to have a better order and direction in all things eftablished, will undoutedlie frame themfelves accordinglie; and then maie this state bee gouverned according to auntient order and custome, concurring with the trew meaning of the treatie; the good frutes wherof will evidentlie appeare, affuring this state within yt felf by the dew autoritie to bee exercised in their goverment, and affure yt more firme unto her Majestie by the good and mutuall correspondence to bee used and entertained; and to shall at all times the force and proceedings of these united provinces bee knowen to her majeftie; according to the which all things for the good and more fecuritie of her

2

her Highnes one flate and countrey may bee directed.

It may likewife be added hereunto, that the autoritie of the lieutenant general and counfell of state, being established as above written, for the dew gouverment of the provinces, the assemblies of the generall states wil be leffe needfull; who in former times never medled further then with the graunting of any contribution, to bee required by those that gouverned, and knew the need and neceffite of the state; and now in their affemblies deale in all things both for warre and pollicie, taking upon them as abfolute gouvernours and fouverains, fo that the councell of state do not any thing of anie importance without the communicating of it with the faid ftates; who then, though nothing belonging to their charg, take order and determine all to their pleafure; fo that the councell of flate ferve but for a cypher; and it were more fit and convenient that her Majefties lieutenant and councellors should meet in their affemblies, where all is knowen and handled concerning the gouverment of the provinces; then in the faid councel which hath but the name:

To enter into the particularities would bee too long, and I will conclude with the 4 perfons, y bee ser al 11211 that l and above prostates times aunted by need their warre folute coune imof it h noorder b that bher ; ht her hould owen nt of uncel

> vould h the fons,

perfons, whereof these general states of all the provinces are formed and confist at this present, of some 14 perfons; amongst the which are some 3 or 4 gentlemen, the rest pensionaries and marchants, and whatsoever they faic the other yeeld therunto, and so keep and continew their course in gouverment, dispatching littel or nothing, if they of Holland come not; who have bin of late so buisted in their private meetings, that their deputies appear feldom or very liteil; wherby all matters are handled at length and with delaie.

The reft that theron dependeth, and of the humours of these general states, and what and how some provinces beare swaie above others, I leave to the report of such as have frequented these countreys, and are acquainted with the state and order theros, ending thus this brief sommarie discourse upon the state and gouverment, which I have set down in haste for want of sufficient time to doo yt more exactlic; the matter being trew, howsoever the course is observed in writing.

Hagh, twentie eighth daie of February, 1589.

1598 (191)

Nº IV.

n ni jin

144)

N° IV.

Plan of an union of the feveral Colonies of Maffachufetts Bay, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York, New Jerseys, Pensylvania, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina, for their mutual defence and security, and for extending the British Settlements in North America; as proposed by * Benjamin Franklyn, Esq; and unanimously agreed by all the Commissioners of the several Colonies aforefaid, met, by order of the Crown, in Congress at Albany in July, 1754.

T is proposed that humble application be made for an act of parliament of Great Britain, by virtue of which one general government may be formed in America, including all the faid Colonies; within and under which government each Colony may retain its present constitution, except in the particulars wherein a change may be directed by the faid act, as hereafter follows.

Prefident That the faid general government be adgeneral and grand coun-ministered by a prefident general, to be apcil. pointed and supported by the crown; and a

> • N. B. Benjamin Franklyn was one of the Commiffioners of Penfylvania, and Mr. fince Governor Hutchinfon, for Maffachufetts-Bay.

grand

grand council to be chosen by the representatives of the people of the several Colonies, met in their respective assemblies.

That within months after the paf- Election of fing of fuch act, the Houfe of Reprefentatives, in the feveral affemblies that happen to be fitting within that time, or that fhall be fpecially for that purpofe convened, may and fhall choofe members for the grand council, in the following proportion; that is to fay,

Maffachuffets 1	Bay			17
New Hampshi	re		-	2
Connecticut				5
Rhode Island			-	2
New York		-		4.
New Jerfeys		•		3
Penfylvania				6
Maryland				4
Virginia —				7
North Carolin	a			4
South Carolina	a		7 	4

Who shall meet, for the first time, at the Place of Sist city of Philadelphia in Penfylvania, being called by the president general, as foon as conveniently may be, after his appointment. That there shall be a new election of New election. L members

... 4.8

ies of Con-New ginia, i, for nd for Nortb rankall the afore-Con-

on be Great al goa, ina and a may n the ected

e ad= e apand a Com-

rand

Hut-

members for the grand council every three years; and on the death or refignation (of any member, his place shall be supplied by a new choice, at the next fitting of the alfembly of the Colony he reprefented.

Proportion of members after first

That after the first three years, when the proportion of money arising out of each Cothree years. lony, to the general treasury, can be known, the number of members to be chosen for each Colony shall, from time to time, in all enfuing elections, be regulated by that proportion, [yet fo as that the number to be chofen by any one province, be not more than feven, nor lefs than two.]

That the grand council shall meet once Meetings of giand coun- in every year, and oftener if occasion require, at fuch time and place as they shall adjourn to at the last preceding meeting, or as they shall be called to meet at, by the prefident general, on any emergency; he having first obtained in writing, the confent of feven of the members to fuch call, and fent due and timely notice to the whole.

Continuance.

That the grand council have power to choofe their speaker, and shall neither be diffolved, prorogued, nor continued fitting longer than fix weeks at one time, without their own confent, or the fpecial command of the crown.

That

three on of ed by he al-

en the h Conown, en for ne, in y that r to be t more

t once on rey fhall ng, or oy the y; he onfent l, and ple.

ver to her be fitting ithout mand That the members of the grand council Members fhall be allowed for their fervice, ten fhillings fterling, *per diem*, during their feffions and journey to and from the place of meeting; twenty miles to be reckoned a day's journey.

(147)

That the affent of the prefident general Affent of be requisite to all acts of the grand coun-^{prefident} cil, and that it be his office and duty to his dety. cause them to be carried into execution.

That the prefident general, with the ad-Power of vice of the grand council, hold or direct all general, and Indian treaties, in which the general in-council. tereft or welfare of the Colonies may be concerned; and make peace or declare war Treaties of with Indian nations. That they make fuch peace and with Indian nations. That they make fuch war. laws as they judge neceffary, for regulating Indian trade, all Indian trade. That they make all purchafes from Indians for the crown of lands Indian purnow not within the bounds of particular chafes. Colonies, or that fhall not be within their bounds, when fome of them are reduced to more convenient dimentions.

That they make new fettlements on fuch New fettlepurchases, by granting lands in the king's ^{monts}. name, referving a quit rent to the crown for the ule of the general treasury.

L 2

ELT'S DI LET

That

That

I aws to govern them.

That they make laws for regulating and governing fuch new fettlements, till the crown shall think fit to form them into particular governments.

Raife foldiers and equip veffels.

That they raife and pay foldiers, and build forts for the defence of any of the Colonies, and equip veffels of force to guard the coafts and protect the trade on the ocean *, lakes, Not imprefs or great rivers. But they shall not impress men in any Colony without the confent of the legiflature of that Colony.

Power to make laws, lay duties, &c.

That for these purposes they have power to make laws, and lay and levy fuch general duties, imposts, or taxes as to them shall appear most equal and just, considering the ability and other circumstances of the inhabitants in the feveral Colonies, and fuch as may be collected with the leaft inconvenience to the people; rather difcouraging luxury, than loading industry with unneceffary burthens.

Gen. traa. forer and particular treafaror.

That they may appoint a general treasurer and a particular treasurer in each government, when necefiary, and from time to time may order the fums in the treasuries of

* According to a plan which had been proposed by Governor Pownall, and approved of by the Congress. Vide Nº VIII.

each

and the into

build onies, coafts lakes, opress ent of

ver to eneral fhall ng the he infuch nconraging unne-

> afurer overnne to ries of ofed by ongrefs. each

each government into the general treasury, or draw on them for special payments, as they find most convenient: yet no money Money how to iffue but by joint order of the president general and grand council, except where sums have been appropriated to particular purposes, and the president general is previously empowered by an act to draw for fuch sums.

That the general accounts shall be yearly Accounts. fettled, and reported to the feveral affemblies.

That a quorum of the grand council, em-Quorum, powered to act with the prefident general, do confift of twenty-five members, among whom there shall be one or more from a majority of the Colonies.

That the laws made by them for the pur-Laws to be poles aforefaid shall not be repugnant, but transmitted. as near as may be agreeable, to the laws of England, and shall be transmitted to the king in council for approbation as soon as may be after their passing; and if not disapproved within three years after presentation, to remain in force.

That in cafe of the death of the prefident Death of general, the fpeaker of the grand council general. for the time being, fhall fucceed and be L 3 vefted

(150)

vested with the fame powers and authorities, to continue till the King's pleafure be known.

Officers Low appointed.

Vacancies how fup-

plied.

That all military commission officers, whether for land or fea fervice, to act under this general conflitution, shall be nominated by the prefident general; but the approbation of the grand council is to be obtained before they receive their commissions. And all civil officers are to be nominated by the grand council, and to receive the prefident general's approbation before they officiate: But in cafe of vacancy by death or removal of any officer, civil or military, under this conflitution, the governor of the province in which fuch vacancy happens, may appoint, till the pleasure of the prefident general and grand council can be known.

Each Colony may de-

That the particular military, as well as fend infelf civil eftablishments in each Colony, remain on enter-gency, &c. in their prefent state, this general constitution notwithflanding; and that on fudden emergencies any Colony may defend itfelf, and lay the accounts of expence thence arifing before the prefident general and grand council, who may allow and order payment of the lame, as far as they judge fuch ac+ counts fuilt and reafonable. avit semeres. Nº V.

orie be

cers, nder ated proobions. d by orefioffith or unthe pens, prefin be

ell as main fitudden tfelf, hence grand ment cacso V.

(151)

has seen in poly and the

N° V.

d synchroning & when the approx

Pro Johanne Caboto, & filiis suis, super terrà incognità investigandà.

Rex omnibus ad quos, &c. Salutem.

TOTUM fit & manifestum, quod dedimus & concessimus ac per præsentes damus & concedimus, pro nobis & hæredi-, bus nostris, dilectis nobis Johanni Caboto, civi Venetiarum, ac Ludovico, Sebastiano & Sancto, filiis dicti Johannis, & eorum & cujuflibet eorum hæredibus & deputatis, plenam & liberam auctoritatem, facultatem & potestatem navigandi ad omnes partes, regiones, & finus maris orientalis, occidentalis & feptentrionalis, fub banneris, vexillis & insignibus nostris, cujuscumque navibus five navigiis, cujuscunque portituræ & qualitatis existant, & cum tot & tantis nautis & hominibus, quot & quantis indictis navibus fecum ducere voluerint, suis eorum propriis sumptibus & expensis.

Ad inveniendum, discooperiendum & investigandum quascúmque insulas, patrias, regiones, sive provincias gentilium & inside-L 4 lium, lium, in quacumque parte mundi positas, quæ Christianis omnibus ante hæc tempora fuerunt incognitæ.

Conceffimus etiam eisdem & eorum cuilibet, eorumque & cujuslibet eorum hæredibus & deputatis, ac licentiam dedimus affigendi prædictas banneras nostras & insignia in quacúmque villa, oppido, castro, insula seu terra firma à se noviter inventis.

Et quod prænominati Johannes & filii cjufdem, feu hæredes & eorum deputati quafcúmque hujufmodi villas, caftra, oppida & infulas à fe inventas, quæ fubjugari, occupari, & poffideri poffint, fubjugare, occupare & poffidere valeant, tanquam vafalli noftri, & gubernatores, locatenentes & deputati eorumdem, dominium, titulum & jurifdictionem eorumdem villarum, caftrorum, oppidorum, infularum, ac terræ firmæ fic inventarum, nobis acquirendo;

Ita tamen at ex omnibus fructubus, proficuis, emolumentis, commodis, lucris & obventionibus, ex hujus modi navigatione provenientibus, præfati Johannes & filii, ac hæredes & eorum deputati teneantur & fint obligati nobis, pro omni viagio fuo, totiens quotiens ad portum noftrum Briftolliæ applicuerint, ofitas, mpora

n cuiæredifigendi n quauterrå

& filii i quafoida & cupari, oare & tri, & tri eorifdicn, opfic in-

proris & atione ii, ac & fint otiens e aperint, plicuerint, ad quem omnino applicare teneantur, & fint aftricti, deductis omnibus fumptibus & impensis necessariis per cosdem factis, quintam partem totius capitalis lucri fui facti five in mercibus five in pecuniis perfolvere;

Dantes nos & concedentes eifdem fuifque hæredibus & deputatis, ut ab omni folutione custumarum omnium & fingulorum bonorum ac mercium, quas fecum reportârint ab illis locis fic noviter inventis, liberi fint & immunes.

Et infuper dedimus & conceffimus eifdem ac fuis hæredibus & deputatis, quod terræ omnes firmæ, infulæ, villæ, oppida, caftra, & loca quæcúmque, a fe inventa, quotquot ab eis inveniri contigerit, non poffint ab aliis quibufvis noftris fubditis frequentari feu vifitari, abfque licentia prædictorum Johannis & ejus filiorum fuorumque deputatorum, fub pæna amiffionis tam navium five navigiorum, quam bonorum omnium quorumcumque ad ea loca fic inventa navigare præfumentium;

Volentes & strictissime mandantes omnibus & fingulis nostris subditis tam in terra quam in mare constitutis, ut præsato Johanni ni & ejus filiis ac deputatis bonam affistentiam faciant, & tam in armandis navibus seu navigiis, quam in provisione commeatûs & victualium pro sua pecunia emendorum, atque aliarum rerum sibi providendarum, suga se se se se se succes auxilia impartiantur.

In cujus &c.

Teste rege Westmonasterium quinto die Martii,

1 miles

Per ipfum Regem.

Arrest 1

11 14: 311.513

57 1

(155)

ar & ensemine ic a carter bonari affiliea. Transfer to actor a carter or where to an

Nono de la Nº. VI. de Dana de une

1

listenavibus neatûs orum, arum, atur.

die

a. -

This Commission—erecting and establishing a board, for the purpose of governing the Plantations, is referred to in page 63 of the first volume.

De Commissione speciali domino archiepiscopo Cantuariensi et aliis.

R^{EX} &c. reverendiffimo in Christo patri et perquam fideli confiliario nostro, Willielmo providentiâ divinâ Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo, totius Anglie primati et metropolitano.

Ac perdilecto & perquam fideli confiliario noftro Thome Domino Coventrie magni figilli noftri Anglie cuftodi.

Ac etiam reverendiffimo in Christo patri ac perdilecto & perquam fideli confilinio nostro Ricardo providentiâ divinâ Eborum Archiepiscopo, Anglie primati & metropolitano.

Necnon reverendo in Christo patri & perdilecto dilecto & perquam fideli confiliario noftro, Willielmo Episcopo London. summo thefaurario nostro Anglie;

Perdilectifque & perquam fidelibus confanguineis & confiliariis nostris,

Henrico Comiti Manchester privati sigilli nostri custodi,

Thome Comiti Arundell & Surr', comiti marescallo Anglie,

Edwardo Comiti Dorchestrie, camerario percharissime consortis nostre regine;

Ac perdilectis & fidelibus confiliariis noftris,

Francisco Domino Cottington, Cancellario & subthesaurario scaccarii nostri ac magistro Curie nostre Wardorum & Liberationum,

Thome Edmonds militi, thefaurario hofpitii nostri,

Henrico Vane militi, controrotulatori hofpitii nostri,

Same Level

Johanni

oftro,

con-

i figilli comiti

nerario

is nof-

anceltri ac ibera-

hof-

ilatori hanni (157)

Johanni Coke militi, fecretariorum noftrorum primariorum uni, et

Francisco Windebanke militi, secretariorum nostrorum primariorum alteri, salutem.

Cum subditorum nostrorum et nuper patris nostri domini Jacobi nuper regis Anglie, memorie recolende, nonuili, regià licentià mediante, imperii nostri territoria, non tantum dilatandi studio, sed precipuè ex pio & religioso domini nostri Jesu Christi evangelium propagandi affectu & defiderio, copiofas gentis Anglicane Colonias, fumma industria & magnis expensis in diversas mundi plagas incultas penitus & incolis vacuas, vel a barbaris nullam divini numinis notitiam habentibus occupatas, deduci fecerunt; nos eorum tranquillitati profpicere volentes gratiose & quieti, vestrumque fide, prudentia, justitiâ, et provida circumspectione plenius confidentes, constituimus vos predictos,

Archiepiscopum Cantuariensem, dominum custodem magni sigilli nostri Anglie,

Eboracenfem Archiepiscopum, dominum thefaurarium nostrum Anglie, dominum cuftodem privati sigilli nostri, comitem marefcallum Anglie,

Edwardum

Edwardum Comitem Dorchestrie, Francifcum Dominum Cottington, Thomam Edmonds Militem, Henricum Vane Militem, Johannem Coke Militem, et Francis un Windebank Militem, & quoflibet quinque vel plures vestrum commissionarios nostros & vobis & quibuflibet quinque vel pluribus vestrum damus & committimus potestatem ad regimen & tutamen dictarum coloniarum deductarum vel que gentis Anglicane inposterum fuerint in partibus hujufmodi deducte, leges, constitutiones et ordinationes, seu ad publicum coloniarum illarum statum, seu ad privatam fingulorum utilitatem pertinentes, corumque terras, bona, debita & succeffionem in eisdem partibus concernentes, ac qualiter invicem & erga principes exteros eorumque populum; nos ctiam & fubditos nostros tam in partibus exteris quibus cunque; quam in mari in partes illas vel retrò navigando, se gerant, vel que ad sustentationem cleri, regimen vel curam animarum populi in partibus illis degentis, exercentis, congruas portiones in decimis, oblationibus, aliifque proventibus defignando spectant, juxta sanas discretiones vestras in politicis & civilibus, & habito confilio duorum vel trium episcoporum, quos ad vos convocandos duxeritis necessários in ecclesiasticis, & clero portiones designandi,

conftitutionum & ordinationum illarum vio-

condendi, faciendi, & edendi, ac in legum,

3.

latores.

Frann Edlitem, Winl pluobis & m dagimen tarum uerint conlicum vatam imque eifdem cem & ulum; partiari in erant, n vel is den deis detiones conquos os in andi, gum, viotores,

latores, penas & mulctas, impositionem, incarcerationem & aliam quamlibet coertionem, ctiam si oporteat & delicti qualitas exigerit per membri vel vite privationem inflingendas providere; cum potestate etiam (nostro adhibito affensu) gubernatores & prefectos coloniarum illarum a locis fuis amovere ex causis que vobis legitime vise fuerint aliofque eorum loco constituere, ac de eis rationem prefecture & regiminis fuorum exigere, & quos culpabiles inveneritis vel a loci privatione, mulcte impositione de bonis eorum in partibus illis levando, vel abdicatione à provinciis illis quibus prefuerint, vel aliter secundum quantitatem delicti castigare, judicesque & magistratus politicos & civiles ad caufas civiles, & cum potestate & sub formâ, quâ vobis quinque vel pluribus vestrum videbitur expedire, ac judices, magistratus & dignitates ad causas ecclesiasticas, & sub potestate & formâ que vobis quinque vel pluribus vestrum episcopis suffraganeais (archiepiscopo Cantuariensi protempore existenti consulto,) videbitur expedire, constituere & ordinare; curiasque, pretoria, & tribunalia tam ecclefiastica quam civilia, judiciorum formas & procedendi modos in eifdem, & ab eis appellandi in caufis & negotiis tam criminalibus quam civilibus, perfonalibus, realibus & mixtis pretoriis, seu de equo & bono, con-AND A stituendi,

ftituendi, & que crimina, delicta vel excession, contractus vel injurias ad forum ecclesiafticum, et que ad forum civile & pretorium spectare debeant, determinare;

160)

(

Provisotamen, quod leges, ordinationes, & conftitutiones hujufmodi executioni non mandentur, quo usque assensus noster eisdem adhibeatur regius in scriptis sub fignetto nostro fignatis, ad minus & hujufmodi affenfu adhibito, eisque publice promulgatis in provinciis in quibus fint exequende, leges, ordinationes, & constitutiones illas plenarie juris firmitatem adipisci, & ab omnibus quorum interesse poterit inviolabiliter observari, volumus & mandamus; liceat tamen vobis quinque vel pluribus vestrum, ut predictum eft, leges, constitutiones & ordinationes fic edendas, licet promulgate fuerint, assensu nostro regio, mutare, revocare & abrogare, aliasque novas in forma predicta de tempore in tempus facere & edere, ut predictum eft, novisque emergentibus malis vel periculis nova apponere remedia, prout decet, toties quoties expediens vobis videbitur et neceffarium;

Sciatis ulterius, quod conftituimus vos & quoflibet quinque & plures vestrum, prefatos Willielmum Archiepiscopum Cantuariensem, Thomam Dominum Coventrie, magni 7

juí

ad

eflus, iaftirium

es, & mann adnoftro fu adpro-, ordie juris uorum ervari, vobis dictum nes fic asiensu rogare, empore m est, ericulis toties eceffa-

> vos & refatos enfem, magni figilli

figilli nostri Anglie custodem, Ricardum Eboracensem Archiepitcopum, dominum thetaurarium, Henricum comitem Manchester, Thomam comitem Arundelle & Surrie, Edward comitem Dorchestrie, Franciscum dominum Cottington, Thomam Edmonds militem, Henricum Vane militem, Johannem Cooke militem, et Franciscum Windebanke militem, commissionarios nostros, ad audiendum & terminandum, juxta fanas diferctiones vestras, omnimodas querelas five contra colonias ipfas feu corum prefectos vel gubernatores ad inftantiam partis gravate, vel ad delationem de injuriis hinc vel inde inter ipfas vel ipforum membra aliquod illatis movendas, partifque coram vobis evocare, ac partibus vel corum procuratoribus hinc et inde auditis, plenum justitie complementum exhibendum; dantes vobis & quibuflibet quinque vel pluribus vestrum, quod fi quas coloniarum predictarum vel aliquem prefectorum eorum ditiones alienas injuste poffidendo, vel ufurpando vel invicem feiplos gravando, seu nobis rebelles a fide nostra subtrahendo, aut mandatis nostris non obtemperantes inveneritis, nobis prius in hac parte confultis, colonias hujufmodi & prefectos eorum ob caufas predictas, vel aliis justis de causis, vel in Angliam redire, aut ad alia loca defignanda divertere mandare, VOL. II. Μ prout prout secundum sanas discretiones vestras equum, justum vel necessarium videbitur;

(162)

Damus infuper vobis & quibuflibet quinque vel pluribus vestrum, potestatem & mandatum speciale, ad omnia, chartas literas patentes & rescripta regia, de regionibus, provinciis, infulis vel terris in partibus exteris colonias deducentibus conceffa, vobis duci facienda, iisque inspectis, si que eorum furreptive vel indebite obtenta, vel per eadem, privilegia, libertates vel prerogativa nobis & corone nostre vel principibus exteris nociva & prejudicialia, indulta vel conceffa fuisse, vobis quinque vel pluribus vestrum innotescat, ea secundum legem & confuetudinem regni nostri Anglie, revocari, jubere; ceteraque agendi, quæ ad regimen falutare & tutamen coloniarum predictarum & fubditorum nostrorum in eisdem residentium fuerint neceffaria; et ideo vobis mandamus. quod circa premissa, ad dies & loca que ad hoc provideritis, diligentes fitis intendentes prout decet, precipiendo etiam & firmiter injungendo, damus in mandatis omnibus & fingulis prefectis provinciarum, in quas colonie predicte deducte fint vel fuerint, & fingulis de coloniis ipfis & aliis quorum in hac parte interest, quod vobis in premissi fint intendentes, mandatisque vestris in eifdem

(163)

eisdem obtemperantes & obedientes, quoties et prout ex parte vestra fuerint requisiti, sub periculo incumbenti.

In cujus rei &c.

Teste rege apud Westmonasterium decimo die Aprilis.

Per ipsum Regem.

Aras 5 1 uin-80 teras bus, exobis rum per ativa cteris ceffa trum uctubere; utare fubtium mus, ie ad entes niter us & quas t, & m in miffis in fdem

M 2

(164)

N° VII.

HAT I may obviate those prejudices by which many people might be led to think, that the doctrines and reasonings contained in the foregoing book are novel, and theories of imagination: That I may at least crave a suspension of those opinions, from whence many people pronounce, that the application made by the Colonies, to deprecate the levying of internal taxes, when imposed by parliament, is unconstitutional and unprecedented; I have here inferted two instances: The one taken from the records of parliament, as abridged and published by Sir Rebert Cotton; the other as published by Daniel King, in 1656.

§ 4^{to} Ricardi 2^{di}. A parliament at Northampton. Petitions of the Commons, with the anfwers. A tallage having been granted; the Commons petition, "That the county " of Chefter, the Bithoprick of Durham, and " the Cinque Forts may be comprized with-" in this tallage."—The King granted for the Cinque Ports only. Note, that the Warden of the Cinque Ports was fummoned to, and fat in this parliament. § The

§ The other is a record of an application from the county palatine of Chefter, fimilar to that made by the Colonies, and upon the fame ground : with the King's answer, and ordinance made out in form. Wherein not only fimilar reafonings are exhibited; but a precedent is alfo holden forth. By which, government, on one hand, may fee, that this county Palatine was exempted from internal taxes lain by parliament, while the faid county had not Knights and Burgeffes of their own election to represent them in parliament; and wherein the Colonies may fee, on the other hand (by purfuing the precedents relative to this county) that when it was thought proper and adviseable to fubject it to taxes imposed by parliament, the privilege of fending Knights and Burgeffes to parliament, was the proper and conftitutional remedy fought and obtained,

ices led ings ovel, may ons, that o deimds of l by ifhed

orthwith ted; unty and ithiththe oned

The

M 3

Сору

(166)

Copy of a Supplication, exhibited to King Henry VI. by the inhabitants of the County Palatine of Chefter.

To the KING, our Sovereign Lord. Anno D. 1450.

MOST Christian Benigne, and Gracious King; We your humble fubjects, and true obaifant liege people, the Abbots, Priors, and all the clergy; your Barons, Knights, and Efquires; and all the Commonalty of your County Palatine of Chefter, meekly prayen and befeechen your Highness: Where the faid county is, and hath been a county palatine, as well before the conquest of England, as continually fince, diftinct and feparate from the crown of England: within which county, you, and all your noble progenitors fithen it came into your hands, and all rulers of the fame, before that time, have had your high courts of parliament to hold at your wills, your chancery, your exchequer, your justice to hold pleas, as well of the crown, as of common pleas. And by authority of which parliament, to make or to admit laws within the fame, fuch as be thought expedient and behovefull for the weal of you, of the inheritors, and inheritance

ling inty

d.

0115 and ors, hts, y of ekly here inty ngepathin proand have hold hel of by or be the hence

ritance of the faid county. And no inheritors or possessioners within the faid county, be not chargeable, lyable, nor have not been bounden, charged nor hurt, of their bodies, liberties, franchises, land, goods, nor posfeffions, within the fame county, [* but by fuch laws as they] have agreed unto. And for the more proof and plain evidence of the faid franchifes, immunities, and freedoms; the most victorious King William the Conqueror, your most noble progenitor, gave the fame county to Hugh Loup his nephew, to hold as freely to him and to his heirs by the fword; as the fame King should hold all England by the crown. Experience of which grant, to be fo in all appeals and records, out of the fame ; where, at your common-law it is written, contra coronam et dignitatem vestram : It is written in your time, and your noble progenitors, finth the faid Earldome came into your hands, and in all Earls times afore. Contra dignitatem gladii Cestriæ. And also they have no Knights, Citizens, ne Burgefles, ne ever had, of the

* The above is a literal transcript of the Record as published by Daniel King. I have not the means of confulting the original, there is certainly fome omiffion or default in the copy. I have inferted the words, but by fuck laws as they, printed between hooks. I fee no other way of making fenfe of it. I have also, in the fame manner, between hooks, inferted the words be wrong.

M 4

faid

faid county, to any parliament holden out of the faid county; whereby they might, in any way of reafon be bounden. And alfo ye and your noble progenitors, and all Earles, whole effate ye have in the faid Earledome; as Earles of Chefter, fith the conquest of England have had within the fame ; regalem, potestatum, jura regalia, prærogativa regia. Which franchifes notwithstanding, there be your commiffions directed out to feveral commiffioners of the fame county, for the levy of fublidy, granted by the commons of your land, in your parliament, late begun at Weftminster, and ended at Leicester, to make levy thereof within the faid county, after the form of their grant thereof, contrary to the liberties, freedoms, and franchifes, of the faid county, and inheritance of the fame, at all times, before this time used, that pleafe your noble grace, of your bleffed favour, the premifes graciously to confider: and alfo, how that we your befeechers, have been as ready of our true hearts, with our goods, at times of need, as other parts of your lands; and also ready to obey your laws and ordinances, made, ordained, and admitted within the faid county, and if any thing amongst us [be wrong,] ready to be reformed by your Highnefs, by the advice of your councel, within the faid county; and hereupon to discharge all such committioners of

169)

of levy of the faid fublidy within the faid county, and of your special meer grace, ever, to fee that there be never act in this parli- . ment, nor in any parliment hereafter, holden out of the faid county, made to the hurt of any of the inheritors, or inheritance of the faid county, of their bodies, liberties, fianchifes, goods, lands, tenements, or poffeffions, being within the faid county. For if any fuch act should be made, it were clean contrary to the liberties, freedoms, immunities, and franchifes of the faid county. And as to the refigning of fuch poficilions, as it hath liked your Highnefs, to grant unto any of your fubjects : all fuch as have ought of grant within the faid county, will be ready to furrender their letters pattents, which they have of your grant, for the more honourable keeping of your eftate; as any other perfon or perfons within any other part of your land; or elfe they shall be avoided by us, under your authority committed unto us, within your faid county. And furthermore, confidering that your befeechers are, and ever have been true, dreading, obaifant, and loving unto you, and of you, as unto you; and of our most dowted Sovereign Lord, our Earle and natural Lord: We the faid Barons, Knights, Efquires, and Commons, are ready to live and die with you, against all earthly creatures; and by your licence, to thew

fhew unto your Highnefs, for the gracious expedition of this our most behaveful petition. And we the faid Abbots, Priors, and clergy, continually to pray to God for your most hounerable estate, prosperity, and felicity, which we all befeek God to continue, with as long life to reign, as ever did prince upon people; with issue coming of your most gracious body, perpetually to raign upon us for all our most fingular joy and comfort.

170)

(

The Kings will is, to the fublidy in this bill contained. Forafmuch as he is learned. that the befeechers in the fame, their predeceffors, nor anceftors, have not been charged afore this time, by authority of any parliament holden out of the faide county, of any quindifme, or fubfidy, granted unto him or any of his progenitors, in any fuch parliament; That the befeechers, and each of them be discharged of the paying and levy of the faid fubfidy. And furthermore, the King willeth, that the faid befeechers, their fucceffors and heirs, have and enjoy all their liberties, freedoms, and franchifes, as freely and entirely as ever they, their predeceffors or anceftors in his time, or in time of his progenitors, had and enjoyed it.

3.

4

Profecuta

0

Ø

р с

0

С

0

t

a u

e

u

c u to ious 1 pe-5, and your od feconer did ing of raign y and

n this arned, r prechargy party, of to him h parach of l levy e, the their 1 their freely ceffors of his

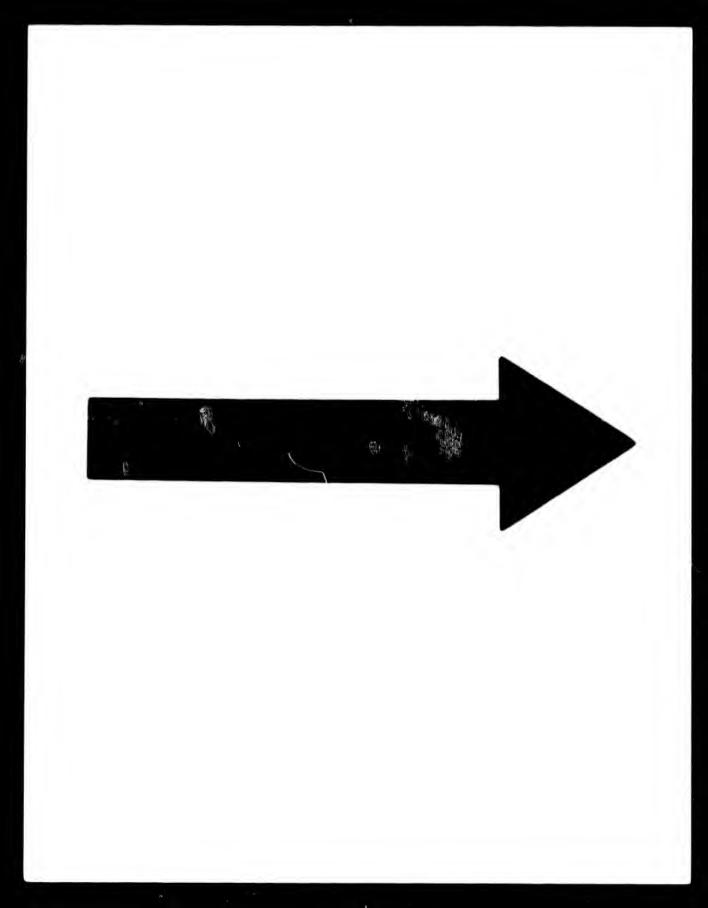
osecuta

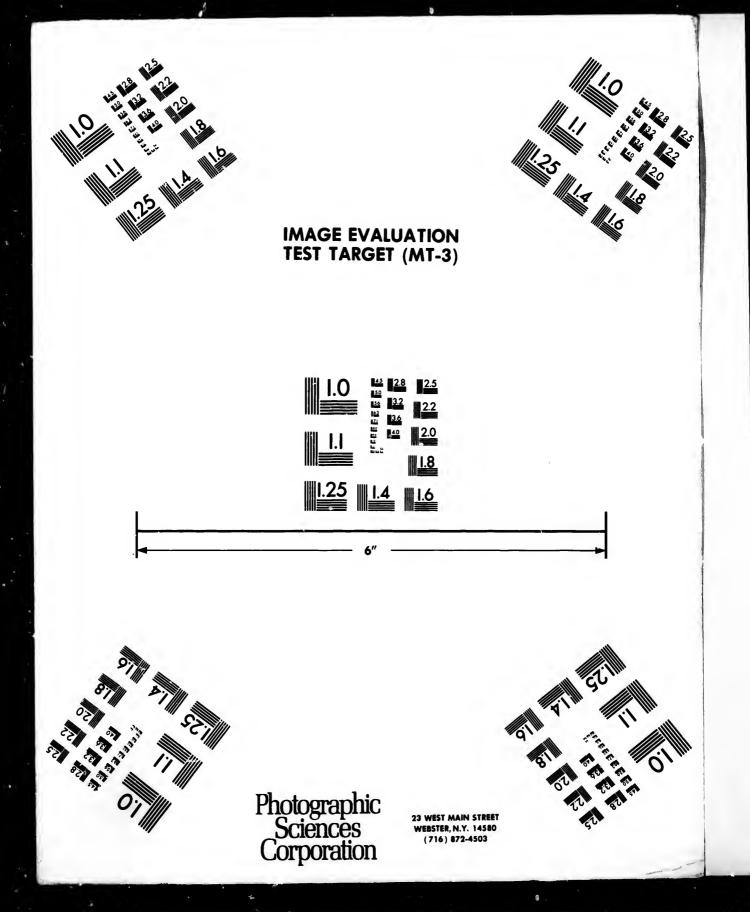
(171)

Profecuta fuit ista Billa ad Dominum Regem per Johannem Manwaring Militem, Radulphum Egerton, Robertum Foulshurst, Robertum Leigh de Adlington, et Johannem Needham, Anno, R. R. H. 6, post conquestum Anglie vicessimo nono.

By the King,

TRUSTY and wellbeloved in God, and trusty and well belond we greet you well. And forasmuch as we have understanding, by a supplication prefented unto us, on the behalf of all our liege people within. our county palatine of Chefter : How their predecessors nor ancestors, have not been charged before this time, with any fifteenth or fubfidy granted unto us, or any of our progenitors, by authority of any parliament, holden out of our faid county, for which caufe, we have charged our chamberlain of our faid county, to make our writs, directed to all our commissioners, ordained for the affeffing and levy of the fubfidy laft granted unto us: Charging them to furcease of any. execution of our letters of commission, made unto them, in that parties. Wherefore, according to our commandment late given by us, unto our faid Chamberlain : We will that







that ye in our behalf, open and declare unto all our faid liege-people: How it is our full will and intent, that they be not charged with any fuch grant, otherwife than they, their predeceffors and anceftors have been charged afore time. And that they have and hold, poffide, and enjoy, all their liberties, freedoms, and franchifes, in as ample and large form, as ever they had in our, or any

Given under our fignet of the Eagle, at our pallace of Westminster, the eighth day of March, Anno R. R. H. 6. Vicesfino nono.

of our faid progenitors days. And that ye fail not thereof, as we truft you, and as you

deem to pleafe us.

1. .

To our trufty and wellbeloved in God, the Abbot of our monastry of Chester; and to our trufty and wellbeloved Knights Sir Thomas Stanley, our Justices of Chester, Sir John Manwaring, and to every of them.

,

Nº VIII.

10 59 111, 10 00100 t 1.

the second se

(173)

N° VIII.

LTHOUGH the following papers, at the time in which they were written, had reference to the ftate of the fervice as oppofed to the French measures and power in America; although they are parts of another work intended to be published at fome future time; yet they are here annexed to the Administration of the Colonies, as they treat of matters very worthy prefent confideration; and as in general they contain ideas of police, which respect the possession, prefervation, and improvement of those acquifitions which our conquests have put into our hands; and the forming them into fome fystem of empire, that shall be the empire of Great Britain.

The first paper, which had for its object the forming of the British possession, together with those of our allies the Indians, into a system of barrier against the French; was written at a time when the subject was entirely new; fcarce ever brought forward to confideration here in England; and when authentic accounts of the true state of the country, as possessed by the English and French, were with great difficulty, if at all, to

e unto our full harged n they, e been we and berties, le and or any hat ye as you

gle, at day of mo.

od, the and to Thor John

VIII.

to be obtained; and I may venture to fay, utterly unknown to our military.

The latter of these papers, was written after it became necessary to change the object of the war; and the only thing which I wish to say of the ideas that it contained, is, that they were literally justified by the events.

A MEMORIAL:

STATING the NATURE of the SERVICE in NORTH AMERICA, and proposing a GENERAL PLAN of OPERATIONS, as founded thereon.

* Drawn up by Order of, and prefented to, his Royal Highnefs the Duke of Cumberland, 1756. By T. POWNALL.

IS Majesty has now reunited the fervice in North America into one power of action, and under one direction, by appointing a commander in chief over all North America, with powers to direct, and with force to carry on this fervice, as a one whole. The next and necessfary point therefore is, that there should be some one general

• From Letters and Memorials which I had, in the years 1754 and 1755, fent to the Earl of Halifax.

plan

to fay,

in after oject of I wish s, that nts.

ICE in pofing Ns, as

to, bis erland,

fervice wer of point-North I with whole. ore is, general , in the

plan

plan of operations fixed; which may be carried on, not only by the general forces employed in the general and military part of this plan, but by every particular province and colony, within its own private councils, and own private operations, coincident with the whole. When fuch plan is fixed, every fum of money that is raifed for this fervice, will be applied to what shall be of real fervice and permanent use; and every the most minute operation that is undertaken, will become as part of fuch plan, "Epyov eis diei; -and every (the most otherwise infignificant) measure would become of more importance, and more fervice, than twenty the most expensive and buffling operations, that arise from momentary and partial starts of whim, vanity, or intereft: there could not even a logg-house be built, nor scarce a piquet fluck down in any part of the country, but what would be a neceffary measure, and whole use (however trifling the thing in itfelf) would extend to the grand fervice of the whole: there would not be a pound, scarce à penny, raifed; but would have its fhare in this grand fervice. On the contrary, while private perfons, or particular independent bodies of people; have confulted only the momentary partial starts of whim, vanity, party, or interest, under the influence of fuch motives; without any general scheme to

to the defence of the country, the taking possible fion of it, or the command of it; without any reference to any general idea; forts have been built up and down the country, that could never have been of use; have never been used; have never been supported; have been left to go to ruin; have been abandoned to the enemy: or, if they have been kept up at all, have been a private standing job to all concerned in them. While thus large fums of money have been fquandered away to no use, or bad ones; while thus fruitlefs detached measures, (that have been of no use; but a perversion of, and incumbrance to the general fervice, and interfering amongst each other;) have been purfued by vague, random fits and farts; the public fervice has not only been ruined, but the people have loft all opinion and confidence in military operations; have been difcouraged and alienated from engaging in any active measures; and always sufpicious, that whatever fums they give to fuch, are either thrown away, or put into the private pocket of some job. On the contrary, were there some one general plan of operations formed; upon the practicability and really intended execution of which they might confide; the affemblies might be perfuaded, the people would be willing, and I verily believe would be perfuaded, to give amply angl

(17.6)

taking withforts untry, have pporthave f they orivate them. e been ones; , (that on of, e, and e been ftarts; uined, d conbeen ing in cious, h, are brivate were ations really might aded, verily mply and

and chearfully: fo that it is not only neceffary to the gaining the end proposed, but also absolutely necessary to the gaining the means, that some such general plan should be fixed.

In order to which, the following paper proposes to confider,

ift, The fite of the country :

2*dly*, The interests of the possession and fettlements:

As the basis of

3dly, The state of the fervice in America.

It becomes neceffary to a right underftanding of these proposed objects, to recur and run up to the first principles on which they were founded; not only because the subject is new, but because it has been misconceived, and misrepresented.

If, Prior to any observations on the settlers and settlements, it will be necessary to take some notice of the peculiar state and site of the countries, in which they are settled: for it is the site and circumstances (I mean those that are unchangeable) of a country, which give the characteristic form, Vol. II. N to to the state and nature of the people who inhabit it.

The confideration of the continent of America, may be properly divided into two parts; from the two very different and diffinct ideas that the face of the country prefents; but more especially from the two diffinct effects which must necessfarily, and have actually arisen, from the two very different forts of circumstances to be found in each tract of country.

All the continent of North America, as far as known to the Europeans, is to the weftward of the endless mountains, a high level plane : all to the fouth-east of these mountains, flopes away fouth-easterly down to the Atlantic Ocean. By a level plane, I must not be underftood, as if I thought there were no hills, or vallies, or mountains in it; but that the plane of a fection, parallel to the main face of the country, would be nearly an horizontal plane; as the plane of a like fection of this other part would be inclined to the horizon, with a large flope to the Atlantic Ocean. The line that divides thefe two tracts; that is the fouth east edge of these planes, or the highest part of this flope; may in general be faid to run from Onondago, along the westernmost Allegehani ridge

(179)

who

ent of to two t and ountry te two y, and ty diffound

, as far wefth level mounto the uft not ere no it that : main rly an a like clined to the thefe ge of f this from rehani ridge

ridge of the endless mountains, to Apalatche in the gulf of Mexico.

2dly, In confidering first the main continent; this high plain; it may be observed, with very few exceptions in comparison to the whole, that the multitude of waters found in it, is properly speaking, but of two masses: the one composed of the waters of the lakes and their fuite, which disembogue by the river St. Lawrence; the other that multitude of waters which all lead into the Mississippi, and from thence to the ocean: the former into the gulph of St. Lawrence, the latter into the gulph of Mexico.

There are in all the waters of Miffifippi, at leaft as far as we know, but two falls; the one at a place called by the French St. Antoine, high up on the weft or main branch of Miffifippi; the other on the cafe branch called Ohio. Except thefe, and the temporary rapidity arifing from the freshes of spring, and the rainy feasons; all the waters of the Miffifippi run to the ocean, with a ftill, eafy and gentle current.

As to all the waters of the five great lakes, and the many large rivers that empty themfelves into them; the waters of the great N 2 Otawawa Otawawa river, the waters of the lake Champlain, of Trois Rivieres, and the many others that run into the river St. Lawrence above Quebec; they may all be confidered in one mass, as a stagnation or lake of a wildernefs of waters, fpreading over the country by an infinite number and variety of branchings, bays, straits, &c. for although at particular places of their communications, and at the mouths of their ftreams, they feem to pour out fuch an immense ocean of waters; yet when they are collected and affembled together, as at a general rendezvous where they all difembogue themfelves into the river St. Lawrence; the whole embouchure of this multitude of waters, is not larger than the * Seine at Paris. The waters of each respective mass (not only the leffer ftreams, but the main general body of each) going through this continent in every courfe and direction; have, by their approach to each other, by their interlocking

* About 12 French leagues above Quebec, over against a place called la Loubiniere, the river St. Lawrence appears to be of a very confiderable breadth : but when the tide, which runs up much higher than that place, has its ebb entirely retired; that breadth which one would have judged to have been that of the St. Lawrence river, remains all dry; except a small channel in the middle, which does not appear to be much larger than the Seine at Paris; nor the waters of it that pass ere, to have a greater current.

I

with

with each other, by their communication to every quarter and in every direction; an alliance and unity; and form one mafs, a one whole.

Let any one raife in his mind the idea of fome low country incapable of being travelled, except on the artificial roads, caufeways, dykes, &c. that have been made through it; and that these roads have throughout the whole country a communication which connects and forms them into a one fystem of defign, a one whole, fuch perfon will readily conceive how eafily and with what few numbers, a General may take possession and hold the command of this country; and when once possefied, how easily he may defend it, by fortifying with redoubts and fuch works, the ftrong holds and paffes in it; and at what an almost infurmountable difadvantage, any one who aims to recover it, must act, even with twenty times the numbers. If there roads and lines have thus a communication forming a one whole, they are the foundation or basis of a command throughout the whole country; and whoever becomes possessed of them, has the command of that country.

Now let any one behold and confider the continent of America, as it really is; a wil-N 3 dernefs

e lake many vrence fidered a wilountry ranchat paris, and feem ean of d and endeznfelves le emers, is The nly the ody of every ir apbcking c, over

t. Lawth : but han that h which t. Lawunnel in h larger hat pais

with

dernels of woods and mountains, incapable of land carriage in its prefent natural unwrought form; and not even to be travelled on foot, unlefs by the good will of the inhabitants; as fuch travelling in those woods and mountains is perpetually and unavoidably liable to ambufcades, and to the having the communication from the one part to the other cut off-Let fuch perfon alfo know, that the waters for these reasons have ever been the only roads that the inhabitants use; and until art and force make others, are the only roads that any body of people can in general take-Compare this state of country, with what is above defcribed; and the fame conclusion, mutatis mutandis, will be found to be derived from it.

Seeing this, as fact and experience fhews it to be; let fuch perfon then recollect what is faid above of the communication and alliance amongft the feveral waters of this continent—of the unity, one mafs, and one whole, which they form—he will fee in a ftrong light, how the watry element claims and holds dominion over this extent of land; that the great lakes which lie upon its bofom on one hand, and the great river Miffifippi and the multitude of waters which run into it, form there a communication,—an alliance or dominion of the watrey element, that able unlled inoods oidving the low, ever ufe; the ı in ounthe l be lews vhat althis one

n a ims nd; lom ippi nto alent,

hat

that commands throughout the whole-that. these great lakes appear to be the throne, the: centre of a dominion, whose influence, by an infinite number of rivers, creeks and ftreams; extends itfelf through all and every part of. the continent; fupported by the communication of, and alliance with, the waters of Miffifippi.

If we give attention to the nature of this. country, and the one united command and dominion which the waters hold throughout it; we shall not be surprised to find the. French (though fo few in number) in poffeffion of a power which commands this country: nor on the other hand, when we come to confider the nature of this eastern part of America, on which the English are fettled, if we give any degree of attention to the facts; shall we be surprised to find them, though fo numerous, to have fo little and languid a power of command, even within the country where they are actually fettled. I fay a very ftrong reason for this fact, arises out of the different nature of the country, prior to any confideration of the difference arifing from the nature of their government, and their method of taking pofferition of this country.

This country, by a communication of N 4 waters,

waters, which are extended throughout, and by an alliance of all these into a one whole, is capable of being, and is naturally, a foundation of a one fystem of command : Accordingly, fuch a fystem would, and has actually taken root in it, under the French. Their various poffeffions throughout this country, have an order, a connection and communication; an unity, a fystem, forming fast into a one government; as will be feen by and by; Whereas the English fettlements have naturally, neither order, connection, communication, unity, nor fystem. The waters of the tract on which the English are fettled, are a number of rivers and bays, unconnected with, and independent of each other, either in interest, or natural communication within land. The vague diffipated random fettlements therefore, (fcattered up and down thefe,) will have no more communication or connection amongst themfelves, than there is amongst the various independent ftreams they are fettled upon.-This country, inftead of being united and ftrengthened by the alliance of the waters which run in it; is divided by these feveral various streams, (detached from, and independent of each other,) into many feparate der ched tracts; that do naturally, and have Mu Ily, become the foundation of as many in prate and independent interefts, Aş

, and hole. foun-Acas acench. councomming e feen ments ction, The nglifh bays, feach nmupated ed up comhemis inbn. l and vaters everal indeparate have many As far as the communion of the waters of any river, or the communion there may be between any two rivers, extends; fo far extended will arife a communication of fystem, of interest and command: the settlements therefore on this tract of country, would be naturally, as they are actually, divided into numbers of little, weak, unconnected, independent governments—Were I to point out the natural division of these tracts and interests, it would point out a new division of the governments of the Colonies, which is not the purport of this paper.——

The confideration of this country, fo far as it is connected with, or has any effect upon the interefts and politics of the English settlements, presents itself to view, divided in two ideas-1ft, The country between the fea and the mountains: 2dly, The mountains themselves. The first part is almost throughout the whole, capable of culture, and is entirely fettled : The fecond, a wildernefs; in which is found here and there, (in fmall portions in comparison of the whole,) folitary detached fpots of ground fit for fettlements: the reft is nothing but cover for vermin and rapine, a den for wild beafts; and the more wild favages who wander in it.

Thus

As

Thus far of the fite of the country, as it becomes the foundation of a natural difference between the English and French posfessions in America. The next point that presents itself to confideration is, the manner in which the English and French have taken possession of, and settled in this country: And,

1st, Of the French.

The French in their first attempts to settle themselves in these parts, endeavoured to penetrate by force of arms; to fix their pofseffions by military expeditions; till through the perpetual and constant abortion of these measures, and the certain disappointment and sure loss that attended them, they through a kind of despair gave over all thoughts of fuch attempts.

Whether the dear-bought experience that they learnt from hence; or whether defpair, leaving their Colony to make its own way; or whether rather, the right good fenfe of Mr. Frontenac and Mr. Calliers, led them to it, is neither eafy nor material to determine; but fo it was, they fell afterwards into that only path, in which the real fpirit and nature of the fervice led. is it ferbofthat annave un-

fetd to pofugh hefe nent ugh s of

that defown ood ers, erial terreal

The

The native inhabitants (the Indians) of this country, are all hunters : all the laws of nations they know or acknowledge, are the laws of fporting; and the chief idea which they have of landed possifier of a bunt. The French fettlers of Canada univerfally commenced hunters, and fo infinuated themfelves into a connection with thefe natives.

While the French kept themselves thus allied with the Indians as hunters; and communicated with them in, and frictly maintained all the laws and rights of sporting; the Indians did eafily and readily admit them to a local landed poffettion : a grant, which rightly acquired and applied, they are always ready to make; as none of the rights or interests of their nation are hurt by it: While on the contrary, they experience and receive great use, benefit, and profit, from the commerce which the Europeans therein, establish with them. Whereas on the contrary, the English, with an infatiable thirst after landed possessions, have gotten deeds, and other fraudulent pretences, grounded on the abuse of treaties; and by these deeds claim possession even to the exclusion of the Indians, not only from many parts of their hunting grounds, (which with them is a right of great confequence) but

but even from their house and home; as by particular inftances, from one end of the continent to the other, might be made appear. Upon these pretences they have driven the Indians off their lands.-The Indians unable to bear it any longer, told Sir William Johnfon, that they believed foon they should not be able to bunt a bear into a bole in a tree, but fome Englishman would claim a right to the property of it as being his tree : -And whatever the great proprietors, patentees, and land jobbers, may affirm or affect to prove; or however angry they may be with those who declare this truth; this is the *fole ground* of the lofs and alienation of the Indians from the English interest; and this is the ground the French work upon.—On the contrary, the French poffeffions interfere not with the Indians rights; but aid and affift their interest, and become a means of their fupport.-This will more clearly and better appear, by a more minute and particular attention to the French meafures in these matters.

1st, No Canadian is fuffered to trade with the Indians, but by licence from the government, and under fuch regulations as that licence ordains. The main police of which is this—The government divides the Indian countries into fo many hunts, according

1

with e gons as ce of es the , acrding cording as they are divided by the Indians themfelves. To thefe feveral hunts there are licences refpectively adapted; with regulations refpecting the ipirit of the nation whofe hunt it is; refpecting the commerce and interest of that nation; respecting the nature of that hunt.

The Canadian having fuch licence, ought not to trade and hunt, within the limits of fuch hunt, but according to the above regulations: and he is hereby abfolutely excluded under fevere penalties to trade or hunt, beyond thefe limits, on any account whatever.

It were needless to point out the many good and beneficial effect; arising from this police, which gave thus a right attention to the interest of the Indians; which observed the true spirit of the alliance, in putting the trade upon a fair foundation; and which maintained all the rights and laws of the hunt, that the Indians most indispensably exact.

But the confequence of the most important fervice which arifes out of this police; is a regular, definite, precife, assured knowledge of the country.

<1 (A) (C)

A man

A man whofe interest and commerce are circumfcribed within a certain department, will pry into, and fcrutinize every hole and corner of that district: When fuch a hunt is by these means as full of these coureurs des boix, as the commerce of it will bear; whoever applies for a licence, must betake himself to some new tract or hunt, by which again begins an opening to new discoveries and fresh acquisitions.

When the French have by these means established a hunt, a commerce, alliance and influence, amongst the Indians of that tract; and have by these means acquired a knowledge of all the waters, passes, portages, and posts, that may hold the command of that country; in short, a *military knowledge* of the ground; then, and not before, *they ask and obtain leave* of the Indians to strengthen their trading house; to make it a fort; to put a garrison in it.

In this manner, by becoming hunters, and creating alliances with the Indians as brother-fportfmen; by founding that alliance upon, and maintaining it (according to the true fpirit of the Indian law of nations) in a right communication and exercife of the true intereft of the hunt; they have infinuated themfelves into an influence over

(190)

ce are ment, hole uch a e couit will muft hunt, o new

means ce and tract; knowa, and f that of the */k and* gthen t; to

nters, ins as at alrding f naexerthey uence over

over the Indians; have been admitted into a landed poffeffion; and by locating and fixing those possessions in alliance with, and by the friendly guidance of the waters, whole influence extends throughout the whole; they are become possessed of a real interest in, and real command over the country. They have thus throughout the country fixty or feventy forts; and almost as many fettlements, which take the lead in the command of the country; not even one of which forts, without the above true spirit of policy, could they support, with all the expence and force of Canada: Not all the power of France could, ('tis the Indian interest alone, that does) maintain these posts.

Having thus got possession in any certain tract; and having one principal fort; they get leave to build other trading houses and entrepôts; at length to strengthen such; and in fine to take possession, of more and more advanced poss; and to fortify and garrison them, as little subordinate forts, under the command of the principal one.

Though these principal forts have fubordinate forts dependent on them; they are yet independent of each other; and only under the command of the governor general: there is a routine of duty fettled for these. these, and the officers and commanders are removed to better and better commands: What the particulars of this are, and of the distribution of the troops, I have not yet learned as to Canada; but in general, the present establishment for this service is three thousand men; of which there are generally two thousand three or four hundred effective.

I have not been able to get an exact lift of the forts in Canada; but the following is fufficient to sketch out the manner in which they conduct this fervice.

It will be neceffary first, to describe the line which now divides Canada and Louifiana in the Illinois country. It begins from the Oubafch at the mouth of Vermillon river; thence to the post called Le Rocher on the river Pæorias; and from thence to the peninfula, formed at the confluence of Rocky river, and the Miffifippi.

Forts in CANADA.

ST. FREDERICK, St. John. Carillon or Tieonderôga. L' Presentation. Les Coudres. FRONTENAC. Quintez.

(192)

(193)

s are ands: f the t yet , the three erally ffect-

£ lift ing is which

e the Louifrom hillon ocher ce to ce of

rôga.

ARA,

NI CARA	Torento. One other.	, 2018,00
INIAGARA,	One other.	
	-	
6 1-1		
MISSILIMAK	INAC, and its Dependen	ncies.
	Presq' Isle.	1
Du QUESNE,	Presq' Isle, Riviere au Bœuf. One other.	
	LOne other.	
	'Twas proposed to	the Court
LE DETROIT,	Two Yrwas proposed to in the year 175: this into a Lieut Roy.	tenancy du
The Post MI		
and Sloux.		
	T wo or three.	
	One on the River N	Michi-
Nipigon,	pocoton.	
	One other on the	Long
	Two or three. One on the River M pocoton. One other on the River.	8
ST. JOSEPH,		
LE PETIT PA		•• *
ALIBI.		
SAGUENAY.		-13
ST. JOHN's, in	Nova Scotia	
51. JOHN 3, III	In all about fixty.	
•	in an about fixty.	•

Most of these forts have fine settlements round them, and they do entirely support themselves; it being usual for both officers and men to defer receiving their pay till the garrison is relieved, which is generally in fix Vol. II. O years; years; and fcarce any thing is fent to thefe garrifons, but dry goods and ammunition.

There is a fine fettlement at Detroit, of near two hundred families; a better still at St. Joseph, of above two hundred; a fine one at St. Antoine; many fine ones about Petit Paris. But the French government does not encourage these; and has, by a positive ordonance, absolutely forbid any one to make a settlement without special licence; which measure they found necessary to take, in order to restrain the Canadians from totally abandoning Canada.

The establishments, posts, and settlements of Louisiana, are as follow :

Thirty-feven companies of fifty men each, and two Swiffe companies of feventy-five men each.

1. The garrifon of New Orleans:

French -900Swiffe -75 ---975

Out of which are garrifoned the lock outpofts of Báliffe, and other fmall pofts.

Detour

195)

Brought over 975

475

Detour Anglois : The garrifon of this confifts of four companies, which have their tour of duty with the Mobile, Illinois, &cc.

" It is neceffary to fix this number here, on account of the proximity of Panfacola, on one part, and of the Englifh on the other; as alfo to influence the Indians, as there are at our meetings and treaties, held here annually with the Indians, fometimes 2, fometimes 3,000 Indians prefent *."

Tombechbé, One company each, a Alibamous, detachment from the garrifon of Mobile.

Four companies of this garrifon relieved every year.

The Illinois fix companies	- 300
* Mr. Vaudreuil to the court.	1750
O 2	The

these n.

t, of ll at fine Petit does fitive make which e, in otally

nents

each, 7-five

975

. . .

etour

Brought over 1750

The pofts were, in 1752, Cafkafias. Fort de Chartres. Village de St. Philip. Praire de Rocher. Cohôkias. Village de St. Jeune Veuve.

The Akanfas, a lefs principal poft, one

company - - - - 50 The Natches, one company - 50 The Nachitoches, one company - 50 for the prefent on account of their not being able to prevent defertions to the Adages, a Spanish post within 7 leagues of it. They propose, when they shall be able to settle a cartel with the Spanish governor, and his Majesty approves of it, to fix two companies there, it being a frontier post.

The Point Coupe, one company - - 50 The German Settlement, one company 50

Total 2,000

The fettlements of Louisiana in general, produce Indigo equal to the Guatimalo, which admit three cuttings or crops annually; 197)

ally; rice in great abundance, and cotton; but they find great difficulty in cleanfing it from the feeds that accompany its growth here; tobacco, pitch, tar; they have a trade to their own iflands with flour, peas, beans, falted or corned wild beef; and pork, hams of hogs and bears, tallow, greate, oil, hides, lumber, planks; they have also myrtle wax, which they export to France; they do alfo, in fmall quantities, manufacture the buffalo wool. From the abundance and natural growth of mulberry trees, they have their thoughts turned to filk; they have iron, lead, copper, and coals in abundance; befides the fkins and coarfe furs, arifing from the Indian trade and hunt: They had, fo long ago as in the year 1744, feveral veffels at their port, which came from Florida and Havanna, and the bay of Campeachy, to trade for boards, lumber, pitch, dry goods, and live stock, to the value of 150,000 pieces of eight. They had a fettled treaty of commerce with the Royal Company of Havanna; by the terms of which, the French were to deliver them at Louisiana, pitch at two piastres a barrel, tar at three piastres a barrel, boards at two reals each. Their fettlements towards the mouth of Mislifippi, are almost deferted and ruined; the fettlers not being able to fupport the expence of banking against the inundations of the fea 03 and

1750

50 50 50

50 50

2,000

eneral, imalo, annually;

and land floods. Mr. Vaudreuil fays, in a letter to the court, September 28, 1752, he shinks it would be much better, to defer for fome years attempting fettlements here, till the ground be more raifed and elevated by the accretion of foil, as it has been three feet in fifteen years last past,

(198)

I mention nothing here of the pofts of New Orleans, Detour Anglois, and Balife, nor of Mobile; because, being marine posts, the confideration of them does not come within the fcope of this paper. I will obferve, that they require our particular attention: They are become the ports to which all the men and ftores, with which the country of the Ohio is furnished, are sent annually and conftantly; as from New Orleans to this country, the way is much shorter than through Canada; the diftance being at the most, (where they are obliged at low water to follow all the windings of the river,) not more than 340 French leagues; but at the usual times that they fend their convoys, not more than 300; and to which they can go up with decked floops, nine or ten months in the year. The trade comes down from the Illinois, about the latter end of December; and goes up towards the latter end of January, or the beginning of February. I fhall

in a 2, he er for , till ed by e feet

ts of Balife, posts, come ll obattenwhich count anrleans norter ing at t low he rigues; their which ne or comes r end e latf Fe-

199) ŧ

I shall describe the post of Tombechbé, from Mr. Vaudreuil's letters. 111

This post restrains the Alibamôus, Tala- April 20, pouches, Abekas, and Cowêtas; preferves the communication between the waters of Mobile, Alibamous river and the Miffifippi; 'tis neceffary for us, in order to keep up amongft the Chactaws, the spirit of warring against the Chickafaws; 'tis alfo necessary January 6, as an entrepôt in our expeditions against the Chickafaws and English. From hence October 28, we can go within feven or eight leagues of the villages of the Chickafaws with periaugoes, by the river Tombechbé, over which, feven or eight leagues of land carriage, we can eafily go by land, and carry cohorns and light field-pieces; from hence also it is, that we must fend out our parties against the March 6, 17-19-Carolinians: yet this fort being a heavy expence, and with great difficulty supplied; and being fo fituated as to be of no use to hinder the English from going to the Chactaws, when that nation is inclined to receive them : as they may conduct their convoys a little above, or a little below the fort, without our being able to oppose them-This being the cafe ; were the Chactaws en- September tirely fecured in our interest, were the Chic-^{24, 1751}. kafaws destroyed, and had the English lost and given up all hopes of ftrengthening them-04

fhall

themselves in that quarter, as we hope to effect; I then think it would be no longer ne-January 12, ceffary to keep up this post: yet till this be effected, it must be kept up; and more effecially, as by suppressing it now, the Chactaw's would think themselves abandoned. May 30, This post, as well as Alibamôus, should always be victualled for a year, left by any revolution in Indian affairs, the road to it should be obstructed.

> As to the pofts in the Illinois country, I am not able to defcribe them particularly; but what appears to be of more confequence, I collect from Mr. Vaudreuil's letters, (from 1743, to 1752) the general idea, upon which the fortifying and fecuring that country is founded.

July 18, 1743. August 30, 1744.

The first fort of their plan, in fortifying the Illinois country, was on the peninfula, in lat. 41. 30. This was a check upon, and barrier against the feveral nations of Sioux, not then in confederacy with them. The next post in this plan was on the river Dorias, (fo called after the junction of the Illinois river and Theakiki) which would be of more especial use, if situated on the north of the lake on that river, whence the roads divide, that lead to Massilianakinac and St. Joseph: Joseph: This he describes as the key to the Illinois country from Canada. Is work & forth a and the second and the second provides

The next is the garrifoning and fortifying the country, from the mouth of Miffouris. to Kafkafias, where there are five pofts. Mr. Vaudreuil thinks that Kafkafias is the prin- 1751. cipal; as it is the pass and inlet of the convoys of Louifiana, as also of those of Canada, and of the traders and hunters of the post Detroit, and that of the greatest part of the favage nations.

There is also at this post, a river where the floops which come from New Orleans, may be fafely laid up in winter.

But Mr. M'Carty, who was on the fpot, Mr. M'Carthinks the environs of Chartres a far better Vaudreuil. fituation to place this post in, provided there ^{January 20}, 17 52. were more inhabitants. He visited fort Chartres, found it very good, only wanting a few repairs; and thinks it ought to be kept up.

The next post (I take them in order of place, not of time) which comes into this plan, is on the Chio, over against the mouth of the Cherokee river : this, he fays, would November 4, 1745. be the key of the colony of Louisiana; would be a fufficient barrier against the En-Auguel 30, 174.4. glifh,

pe to er neiis be efpe-Chaconed. ld aliy reaould

ry, I arly; ence, from vhich try is

fying hfula, ipon, is of hem. river f the ld be horth roads H St. eph :

5

May 15, glish, and reftrain their incroachments; and 1751. would obstruct their defigns in alienating the Indians of the Ohio; it would reftrain the incursions of the Cherokees, on the river Ouabash, and river Missisppi; it would alfo check the Chichafaws; and would by these means secure the navigation of the November Miffifippi, and the communication with our 4, 1743. posts. He here expresses the greatest uneafinefs, (as the French court did not care to engage in the meafure at that time) left the English should build a fort here; in which cafe, fays he, we must give up all communication with the Illinois; for the English would become mafters of all the navigation of that country.

Mr. Jonquiere propofes another fort at April 8, the mouth of Rocky river, (this is in the government of Canada) which, he fays, would fecure the tranquillity of the fouth of Canada. This, fays Mr. Vaudreuil, together with the post of the Illinois, would restrain and become a barrier against the English; and cover all our Indian allies to the weft, from our enemies, the English, the Cherokees, the Catawbas, and others.

> By these posts above, and the posts of the Miamis, this whole country is fecured and fortified. This country, fays Charlevoix, (in

3752.

(203)

; and nating effrain he riwould uld by f the th our ft unare to eff the which nmunglifh gation

rt at fays, th of ether ftrain lifh; weft, hero-

f the and voix, (in

(in 1721) will become the granary of Louifiana; and in 1746, we find it actually becoming fo; for in that year it fent down to New Orleans fifty ton of flour; in 1747, we find it well furnished with provisions, and having fine crops; and in a letter of Mr. Vaudreuil's 1748, we have an account of its produce and exports - flour, corn, bacon, hams, both of bears and hogs, corned pork and wild beef, myrtle wax, cotton, tallow, leather, tobacco, lead, copper, fome fmall quantities of buffalo wool, venifon, poultry, bears-greafe, oil, skins, and some coarfe furs; and we find a regular communication fettled with New Orleans, by convoys which come down annually the latter end of December, and return at lateft by the middle of February.

Thus the French do not only *fettle* the country, but also *take possible form of it*; and by the form, fite, and police of fuch possible flions, (led on and established by the guidance of, and in alliance with the waters,) a natural foundation of a one command, have they acquired; and become possible field of *the command of this country*.

By these means, (I repeat it,) have they created an alliance, an interest, with all the Indians on the continent; by these means have have they acquired an influence, a command, throughout the country: They know too well the fpirit of Indian politics, to affect a fuperiority, a government, over the Indians; yet they have, in reality and truth of more folid effect, an influence, an afcendency *, in all the councils of all the Indians on the continent, and lead and direct their meafures; not even our own allies, the Five nations excepted; unlefs in that remains of our interest, which, partly the good effects of our trading house at Oswego, and partly General Johnson, has preferved to the Englifh, by the great effeem and high opinion the Indians have of his fpirit, truth, and honour.

* I mention nothing here of the influence of the Jefuit miffionaries, becaufe nothing is meant lefs than religion by them.

nand, w too fect a lians; more *, in n the meare nans of effects partly Enginion and

of the s than

(205)

EAST.

In the French Intereft.

Efquimaux. St. John's. Micmacs. Penobícots. Noridgwalks. Abenakais. St. Francis Indians. Cachnewage. Scaatecoke. Ofwegatchie. Senekes. Supposed to be in Onondagas. the British Intereft, but greatly Cayuges. Oneides. debauched by the Tufkaroras. French. Mohawks. 7 Wholly in the Bri-Mehikanders. tifh Intereft. Loft to the English, Delawares. except a few on Shawenefe, Sufquehanah. Supposed in the En-Catawbas. glifh Intereft, but Cherokees. much debauched Chickafaws. by the French.

West.

French. Sioux. Nadonefferies. Illinois. Tawigtwaes. Miamis. Pianketshanaes. Wawyactaes. Pieques. Kafkufkies. Cawetas. Abekas. Talaponches. Alibamons.

The four Nations of the Creeks, as above.

NORTH.

Wholly French.

Affinipoeles. Adirondacks. Algonkins. Outawawaes. Chononderdes or Hurons. Meflifagues. Outagamies.

Mifcontiris.

Almipogins.

Nipifenes.

Sakis. Chriftanaux. Skaniadereroenues.

SOUTH.

Ofagaes. Akanfaes. Chaétaws. Panimaes. Adages.

The English American provinces are as fine *fettlements* as any in the world; but can fcarce be called *poffeffions*, because they are so fettled, as to have no possible possible to the country: They are settled as farmers, millers, fishermen, upon bays and rivers, that have no communication or connection of interest; confequently,

AST.

confequently, the fettlers belonging to thefe rivers, bays, &c. have no natural connection.

But further, the fettlers upon any one river or fet of waters, (which waters having a connection, might become the natural feat of a one intereft) are yet fo fettled, that they have no connection nor union amongft each other; fcarce of communion; much lefs of defence.

Their fettlements are vague without defign, fcattered, independent; they are fo fettled, that from their fituation, 'tis not eafy for them to unite in a fyftem of mutual defence; nor does their intereft lead them to fuch fyftem; and even if both did, yet through the want of a *police* to form them into a community of alliance, unity, and activity amongft themfelves; they are helplefs and defencelefs; and thus may the Englifh be confidered as having, for many hundred miles, a long *indefenfible line of frontiers*, prior to the confideration of the nature of the enemy they may be engaged with.

3dly, The state of the service as arising from the above facts.

It appears from the first cast of the eye, that

thefe con-

ne riving a l feat t they t each less of

ut deare fo is not nutual them d, yet them y, and help-Enghunntiers, of the

irifing

eye, that that the English, without some preparative measures, will not be able to carry into execution any military expeditions agair [^] the French in the upper part of America; because from any post where they can form an army, and lay in all its stores, ammunition and provisions: they must undertake for many hundred miles, a long, dangerous, and tirefome march; by roads the most harraffing, and of almost insuperable difficulty, through a wilderness of woods and mountains, without magazines of forage, &c. or any other affiftance; through a country liable to ambufcades, and all the ftrokes of war; through a country, whereof the French are poffeffed of the command; or if through any part where their perfonal command does not actually exift, yet where Indians, (the most dangerous enemies in such a wildernes) where the Indians, I fay, are mafters; and poffeffed of every hold and pafs.

To put this matter in a ftill ftronger light; let any one confider, whence arifes the danger of marching through a fortified country; whence the danger of a general's leaving behind him, an enemy's fort or garrifon, not taken.—It is that the enemy, who has poffeffion of thefe, has the command of the whole country, except the fole confined fpot, where the ftronger army is prefent; can forbid bid and reftrain the inhabitants from furnifhing you with fuch affiftance as the country is otherwife capable of affording; can, by fallies from thefe pofts, cut off and intercept all your parties and convoys; all your intelligence; can cut off all communication with your magazines, and your own pofts; can perpetually harrafs and obftruct your march, and return within cover, before any fuperior party fent out from the main body, can reach them; you are alfo always liable to furprize, even within your camp.

(208)

A march from any post where the English can *at prefent* form any army, and collect its stores, ammunition, provisions, carriages, &c. through the country, as at this day above circumstanced; is, literally and precisely, in its effect, the fame thing as the march here defcribed.

While the Indians—whofe chief art of war is that of forming ambufcades; who have acquired, from practice and art, a peculiar method of fecretly traverfing the woods, and lying concealed in them—while the Indians, whofe military fkill of fighting, either fingle or in parties amidft thefe woods, renders the fituation to them equivalent to fighting under cover—while the Indians thus trained, and incredibly expert in the art; can furcoun-; can, interl your cation pofts; t your ore any body, liable

Englifh lect its ces,&c. above fely, in ch here

of war ave-acbeculiar ls, and e Indieither s, renlent to ns thus he art; can

can at any time fally out from the holds, fastnesses, lurking places, and ambushes, in which the country abounds, (and all which they know;) nay, even from the cover of the woods, and drive in all your finall outparties; prevent fuch foraging as the country will afford; intercept and obstruct your convoys; cut off your communication of intelligence, provisions, and fuccours; and retire again within cover, out of danger of any purfuit; and continue thus conflantly to harrafs, and perhaps furprife, at length, your army: while they can do this, (and believe it, all this they can do and will do;) your army is to all intents and purpofes, (as to the war with the Indians) marching through a country of forts and fortreffes. Let any one here, compare this state of the case, with the cause and reasons of the failure of the feveral military expeditions on this continent, and its truth will be still more evinced.

As then no General would think of making a campaign in any country, to reach which, he must march through an enemy's fortified country; without fome *previous measures* to maintain his march, and fecure his retreat through fuch; fo here (I repeat it) there are fome *previous measures necessary*.

Vol. II.

 \mathbf{P}

The

The first of these measures is, the setting the police of our alliance with the [Kenunctioni or] Five-nation confederacy, upon a permanent, solid, and effectual basis; so as to restore and re-establish our interest with them.

The *fecond* is, taking pofieffion of, and fortifying a fystem of advanced posts and entrepôts; viz magazines whereat to collect stores and provisions; camps, from whence (within a reasonable distance, and by a practicable way) to make our *fortis*.

Thirdly, The fecuring the dominion of lake Ontario for the prefent; and laying a foundation for the like dominion on lakes Erie, Huron, and Michigan.

Let now any one confider the above flating of the form of the country that the Englifh inhabit; and in which the operations of our arms muft lie: Let him raife in his mind the precife idea of the native inhabitants who poffers this country; and of the kind of operations by which we are, and thall be attacked; and by which we may be able to defend ourfelves; Let any one, I fay, by a ferious attention to the above facts, form to himfelf that idea, which an actual and ettling enuncapon a ; fo as ft with

of, and and encollect whence a prac-

nion of laying a on lakes

bve stathe Engntions of e in his inhabil of the are, and we may y one, I ve facts, n actual and

and practical knowledge of the country would give him : Let him then be told a melancholy truth, that almost all those Indians, whofe friendship and alliance were once our best and securest barrier; are now by the French debauched and alienated from us, nay even turned against us, and become the fervile instruments of the French robberies, maffacres, and treacherous incroachments : Let then his eye be turned upon the flate of our back inhabitants, fettled in a vague, unconnected, defenceless manner; up to the mountains; to the very mouth of the dens of these favages-Any one attentively confidering the above facts, will fee the English colonies in not only a weak defenceles flate, but exposed to, and almost at the mercy of, a very powerful enemy: Confidering this, and the above facts, he would fee how fuperficial, wild, and falle an idea of the fervice that is, which would create a barrier by a line of forts; a barrier that might as well pretend to cut off the bears, wolves, and foxes from coming within it, as the Indians; a barrier that would have no more effect than fo many fearcrov s, unlefs you could actually build another Chinefe wall; and fo another; ftill advancing your wall-fence, as you advanced your fettlements; a barrier that would take more troops to man it, than the country inclosed within it,

it, would take people to cultivate it; a line of 13 or 14 hundred miles, that is at last no line at all—he would, I fay, fee this meafure, not only impracticable, but ineffectual : Nay, were it practicable, and could it take effect; yet the infupportable expence of it, would render it impoffible to be engaged in. Any one reafoning on the ideas as above ftated, and knowing them to be what they really are, facts; would turn his thoughts on those objects, which experience, fact, and reason point out to be one part of our barrier; Namely, a real and ftable alliance with the Indians; formed on fuch articles, as fhould give us the fame kind of poffeffion and command in the Indian country, the fame influence in Indian affairs, as the French have. And.

First, As to that part of our barrier, and the fervice which is connected with, and depends on our alliance and interest with the Kenunctioni, the confederacy of the Five nations; I can only repeat what I have faid formerly on this fubject.

* " The original natural form; under which the Indian country lay, being that of a foreft;

* This propofal, amongft others, was contained in a paper delivered by the author of this memoir, to the com-

a line at last s meaectual: it take of it, ngaged s above at they oughts e, fact, of our alliance articles, offeffion ry, the French

er, and th, and ft with the Five ave faid

under that of 1 foreft;

ained in a ir, to the com-

a forest; stocked not with sheep, or oxen, or horfes; not with beafts of labour and domestic animals, but only with wild beasts and game; all that the country afforded for food or raiment, must be hunted for : The Indians, therefore, would conftantly be, as they were in fact, not land-workers, but hunters; not fettlers, but wanderers; they would, therefore, confequently never have, as in fact they never had, any idea of property in land; they would confequently never have, as in fact they never had, any one common fixed intereft; any one communion of rights and actions; any one civil union; and confequently not any government: They know no fuch thing as an administrative or executive power, properly fo called. They allow the authority of advice, a kind of legiflative authority, but there is no civil coercion; they never had any one collective, actuating power of the whole, nor any magiftrate or magiftrates to execute fuch power.

But the country now appearing under a very different form; and they, the Indians, being under very different circumstances, arising from trade, treaties, and war; be-

ginning

commissioners of all the Colonies, assembled at Albany in 1754, and transmitted to government with their minutes.

ginning to feel, rather than fee; to find by experience, rather than reafon, the neceffity of a civil union of power and action; and that thefe circumftances have, in fact, for many years been formed; and have at length formed to them fuch a collective power—Thefe people are precifely in that point of circumftances, where a community, that was before only a community of fociety, is becoming that of government.

In all their actions, therefore, of late years, whether of treaty or war, they have recurred to *fome agent* to actuate this power : They are not only become capable of fuch a general leading, but their circumstances require it. The circumftances with which they are connected, had formed them into a ftate; but from the circumftances of the fociety under which they live, they can never have amongst themselves a *flatebolder*; their circumftances require and look out for fome fuch; fome fuch they must have; and if we do not find fuch for them, the French will; and are, actually attempting it. Further, as they know not, nor acknowledge any leading power, but that of authority; there can be no nominal, visible appointment of fuch leader; they will never appoint fuch within themfelves; nor will they ever fubmit to any one appointed from without. This

(214)

This was the miftake of the governor of Canada, which had like to have loft him all the Cachnuagas two years ago.

* Therefore fuch perfon or perfons only, as can acquire, or actually are in pofferion of, this leading power; this authority with them; can be *this agent*, *this leader*, *this* STATEHOLDER."

For this manager, this ftatcholder, the government hath appointed Sir William Johnfon; a perfon not only the proper one; but precifely the very and only perfon that the above circumftances and nature of things pointed out: the perfon whofe knowledge of Indians; whofe influence, by the opinion the Indians have of him; whofe very uncommon zeal for the intereft of his country; whofe integrity and bravery, will, by fuch measures as the Indians can really and indeed truft in, if properly fupported; reftore this branch of our affairs to its falutary effect.

He has, in his papers, (communicated by me,) mentioned every thing neceffary, as to

P 4

nd by heceftion ; fact, hve at lective h that unity, of fof late have ower: fuch lances which into a of the in neolder; ut for ; and rench Furre any there ent of füch r fubthout. This

^{*} This paper was drawn up, in the year 1754, not only to fuggeft the neceffity of the office, but to recommend Colonel, fince Sir William Johnson, to be the officer. It fucceeded accordingly.

the management of this Indian administration: I cannot but add, as a collateral meafure, that would strengthen and finally confirm such our interest amongst the Indians, the making little settlements at Ofwego, Niarondaquat, and Niagara *, and at our other forts, by leave of the Indians.

Secondly, We should then, according to good faith and truth, leave the Indians in full and free poffeffion of their dwelling country and hunting grounds; which the English have, in the most folemn manner, confirmed to them by treaty; and of which, by the fame treaty, we have undertaken the protection: we should guaranty and protect fuch to them, to their use; and also all their hunting-grounds.—This part of the general scheme also, is in some degree carried into execution, by the inftructions given by general Braddock to general Johnson, for his direction in his late treaty with the Indians: + which inftructions were, at the defire of general Braddock and governor Shirley, drawn up by your memoralist, having been first proposed by him. This measure will be abfolutely necessary to preferve these In-

* If we had done this, or would now do it, we need never fuffer ourfelves to think of abandoning our feveral diffant pefts, on account of the very enormous expense of maintaining them.

+ Vide Appendix, Nº II.

dians

traneaonans, ego, our

to to full ntry glifh med the protect heir ieral into by his nns: e of ley, een will Inneed veral

ans

encc

(217)

dians to our alliance, as may be feen fin-almost every treaty held with them fince the first furrender of those lands: 'it' is 'also neceffary to support ourselves against the western French Indians. This proposed meafure will be fo far from being an impediment or hurt to our interest, that the greatest advantages may be made of it, both in the means towards executing the general plan, and in the final execution of it. The ufesthat may be made of this measure, towards the executing of this plan, are; That while we are undertaking the protection of the Indian country and hunting grounds, we are actually becoming poffetfed of the command of the country. When by this mode of command for the purposes of protection, we shall be in actual poffeffion of the whole of this country-and when by means of the * Colonies proposed, we shall be *fettled* on part thereof-the Indians will then be pre-Terved and protected to their fatisfaction; and yet cannot move to war, or hunt, nor even fubfift, but as they shall maintain their alliance with the Englith : and yet in conjunction with us, their whole force (by thefe means being become infinitely greater) may be directed at any time into the heart of the enemv's country.

* This refers to a Memorial fent by me to Lord Halifax, in December 1754.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, As to the administration of * Indian affairs to the fouthward; the first step, necessary to be taken is, that there be an absolute stop put to all provincial adminifiration; that there be no more agents, commission or interpreters, appointed by, and acting under the private orders of a particular province or proprietories; from whence arise interferings and confusion, and oppofition in our Indian affairs; always to the obstructing, often to the utter ruin, of the British general interest.

Inftead of thefe, there fhould be one only principal commiffary (who understands the language and interest, and is acquainted with the people of that nation) appointed feve-

* Thefe Indians are the Catawbaes, Cherokces, Chickafaws, and Creeks. The Creeks are in part debauched and alienated from us by the French, and attend the French treaties conftantly at the Mobile; efpecially the Alibamôus, Cowëtaes, Telapôuches, and Abekaes, and are in great measure held under fubjection by the French forts at Alibamôus, and Tombeckbá.

The Chickafaws are greatly weakened, and almoft ruined by the intrigues of the French within them, and by the wars with the Chactaws, and other French Indians, being unfupported by us.

The Cherokces and Catawbaes, but ill fupported by us, are conftantly harrafied and warred upon by the Five Nations, at the inftance of the French influence among that people. * Inrft ftep e be an dminiagents, ted by, a parwhence l oppoto the of the

ne only nds the ted with d feve-

herokces, n part deand attend efpecially Abekaes, ion by the

nd almoft them, and french In-

ported by y the Five ice among

rally

rally to each nation : this perfon fhould have under him feveral ftore-keepers and fmiths.

All these principal commissions, should be fubordinate to a one general agent or superintendent*; who should be under the orders of the commander in chief only—acting by his orders and instructions, form'd on a *one general idea* of the English and Indian interest; of our alliance; and of the measures to be constantly and uniformly pursued.

As the being fupplied with European goods, is to the Indians the first effential interest of their politics; is the sole and actual object of their alliance with us; and the only real and permanent motive of their attachment to us; and as, according to the custom of these people, all public transactions are executed by exchange of prefents; all public friendship preferved and animated by public hospitality and liberality; the first and fundamental object of the English measures, should be to provide for these, in a regular and sufficient manner. The being able to do this, is our peculiar advantage and superiority over the French in

* N. B. There has been one fince appointed, Mr. Stewart, a very active, intelligent, and able man.

thefe

these affairs; their measures are perpetually impeded and distressed, through their being unable to do this; it is the only difficulty that they have not furmounted, and cannot furmount: it is this that makes our alliance, if we did conduct it as we ought, the true and natural interess, the true and natural politics of the Indians.

There ought therefore to be concluded with these southern nations, a general alliance of friendship, and mutual defence and affistance, founded on the British general interest (not any provincial private one,) upon a one general, uniform plan: the 1/t article of which should be, to do justice to all their claims; to redress all their wrongs.

2*dly*, To maintain with them all public hofpitality and friend(hip, by public, annual, and occafional prefents; by entertaining them; and by all other ufual affiftance to eftablish a fair and just trade with them; and fettle ftores within their countries, or whereever is most convenient for them; with a constant fupply of goods, at a fettled and cheaper rate than the French do fupply them.

3*dly*, Mutually to affift each other against all attempts of the French or their Indians, or

(220)

cully being culty annot iance, e true atural

luded al ale and al inupon article l their

public hnual, aining ice to h; and vherevith a d and fupply

igainft idians, or or any hoftile attempt whatfoever upon either; conftantly and faithfully to give all intelligence to each other; to mend their guns when they have occafion to go to war; to fupply them at fuch times with ammunition; and always to fend fome of our people along with them if they require it, except againft Indians in alliance with the Englifh; and whenever the Englifh call upon them to go out with them to war, that the Englifh fupply fuch as want them, with arms; and *all*, with provisions and ammunition; and defend and maintain their wives and children in the mean time.

This being done; a fund capable of anfwering the above engagements, and of conftantly and faithfully executing them; and alfo capable of fupporting an administration of Indian affairs, that may work effectually to the preferving and maintaining the British interest in fuch measures; should be settled on a general and permanent foundation: which may be as follows:

That the feveral colonies who have hitherto conftantly raifed monies for Indian affairs, as a private provincial fervice; fhould for the future appropriate fuch monies to this general fund.

That

That fuch Colonies as have never raifed any monies for thefe fervices; fhould, for the future, raife and appropriate to this fund, fuch fums, under a quota, in proportion to the benefit received, or the harm avoided, by the barrier arifing from this general alliance and administration of Indian affairs: and it becomes worthy of confideration, whether the iflands in the Weft Indies, (their intereft being infeparably connected with that of the continent,) fhould not bear a certain proportion of taxes towards the charge of the war.

Matters within ourfelves being thus prepared and provided for;

The first step of our measure in this branch should be, establishing, (by the advice of people of the best authorities, and most knowledge of the affairs of each nation respectively,) at proper places, general magazines for this fervice; at the most convenient entrepôts between *marine and inland navigation* of carriage, whence less frores, respectively subordinate to these, might be best supplied within the Indian countries; or where is most convenient for the Indians: As for instance, one at Schenectady, or rather at Mount Johnson—one either at William's ferry on the Potomac, or raifed l, for this oporharm is gendian derandies, sected : bear s the

pre-

this adand h naeneral moft *id in*leffer thefe, ndian ht for Sche--one omac, or or at Fort Cumberland on Will's creek one other fomewhere on the Roanoak, or James river—one other at fort Augusta, on the Savannah.

From these general magazines, the several national or tribe-ftores fhould be conftantly fupplied : Thefe ftores should be also public truck-houfes; and the ftore-keeper be alfo a public truck-master : These to be fixed in each particular nation, in fuch places, and in fuch number as hath been ufual, or will be best for the good of the fervice; at each of which there should also be a smith. The commiffary, appointed to the affairs of each nation, to command and fuperintend all the ftore-keepers, truck-mafters, fmiths, and all the flores; and to be conftantly circuiting through thefe; living always at fome one of them, and attending respectively at any of them; wherefoever he is commanded by the general agent, or the good of the fervice requires : Alfo at all times (unlefs in matters of a more public general import, when the general agent is to attend) to negotiate and transact all matters of business which such nation may have to do with any other, or with any colony; and to interpret between the Indians of the nation he is appointed commiffary to: and in general, within the powers of his inftructions, to do all those matters 3

matters and things as have ufually been done by provincial agents or interpreters: That the ftore-keepers and fmiths do keep conftant journals, and make report to the commiffary; that the commiffaries keep a regular journal of these reports, and of their own transactions, and report to the general agent; and he likewise to keep a journal and record, and report to the commander in chief.

The order then of the public prefents, the public hofpitality and liberality, being fettled, according to the nature of those Indians and our alliance with them;

The method and laws of the trade with them being also fettled;

The next ftep to be obferved; I take entirely from the French: and it is a measure, according to my idea, abfolutely neceffary. Obferving the want of fubordination among the Indians; the French make a number of fachems, to whom they give medals, and appoint them to prefide as chiefs, leaders, counfellors, speakers, &c.: fome over eight, some over ten villages, and so on as their influence extends: being easily, by prefents and money, posseffed of these medal-chiefs; they thus easily acquire a more uniform and ftable done That concoma retheir eneral al and er in

s, the g fete In-

with

te enafure, effary. mong ber of , and aders, eight, eight, eifents hiefs; n and ftable (225)

stable management of their Indians, that the Indians even know of amongst them-felves.

Let it be a ftanding inftruction, faithfully in all and every matter, to execute and fulfil, according to the true fpirit and intent, the above treaty and alliance; both as to the true intereft of the Indians, and as to the forming their alliance into a firm barrier against the French, and enemy Indians.

The feveral people employed in Indian affairs, to have conftantly in view, the scheme of uniting the feveral nations into a confederacy like that of the Five Nations. In order to this, that there be found out and fixed upon, fome one place in the back country, whereat the general agent fhould hold all his general treaties and parlies with these Indians, as the French do at the Mobile; which place, upon the fuccefs of this fcheme, to be the council place—as Onondaga is to the Five Nations. Let any one confider how a little republic, formed by the Welinis on the river Ouäbafch, by fome free and independent Indians; did greatly embarrafs, and had well nigh ruined the French affairs there.

This third branch (according to my idea Vol. II. Q of of our barrier) being thus or in fome fuch way provided for and administered;

(226)

The fourth, is, that, of a fystem of magazines and fortified camps as entrepôts; whereat, either to collect for defence; or from whence, within a reafonable diftance and by a practicable way, to make our fortis. This branch is in part provided for : for by removing and advancing these stores, and at length, (when a proper place is found to fix them on, that would defend and command the country,) getting leave to fortify them, and fo erect them into forts; the Indians are defended; are at the fame time held within proper terms; and we have, within a friend's country, advanced posts or entrepôts, that would answer all the purposes of defensive, or offensive, operations against the enemy: and all that could be in this place faid on that head, I have very minutely entered into, in that part, where I explain the nature and state of the country and its inhabitants—I will only add, the opinion which the French expressed of one post, which we once had; and of another, that they feared we were about to make.

Mr. Vaudreuil, governor of Canada, in his letter to the court, May 10, 1744, mentioning the leave which the English had got to ich

maits; 01 ince rtis. r by id at o fix nand nem, lians held hin a pôts, det the place y enh the inhavhich h we eared

a, in mend got to to build a fortified trading house at Ockfulques, amongst the Creeks, fays, " If the measure of which this might be a foundation, should be properly carried into execution, it would oblige the French to retire from their fort of Alibamôus down to the Mobile."

And again in another letter, September 17, 1744, he mentions this ftore-house having opened a traffick with the Chactaws -yet this the English abandoned; and the French have now a fort on each main branch of the river Mobile; one at Tombechbé, and fort Toulouse at Alibamôus.

In another letter of November, 1748, he fays, " it would be very eafy for the English, by means of the river Ohio, to form an entrepôt at Prudehomme to ferve them as a retreat; having the nations of the Shawoänaes, Cherokees, and Chickafaws, on their back to fupport them. From this entrepôt, it would not be difficult for them to penetrate to the Ackanfas, Panis, Ofâges, Padouces, and Mifouris, and all the other nations of that country; if the posts and fettlements of the Illinois were broke up, as they would certainly be, did the English fettle and fortify at Prudehomme : not only the inhabitants of the Illinois would be loft Q_2

to us, but also the inhabitants near New Orleans, would be fo greatly diffressed for the want of the fuccours and provisions of this country, the granary to it; by lofs of the benefit of the trade with that post; that it would be difficult for them to fubfift; it would be impoffible to maintain the expence they must live at without it; and they must be obliged to abandon the Colony: But should not matters be so bad as this; yet, were the post of the Illinois taken away, the Colony would not be able to extend itfelf at furthest, beyond the post of the Natches, without a very ftrong garrifon at the post of the Ackansas; and at best that poft would be too low to cover the hunting country."

When fuch forts are erected, the commanding officer at each fort fhould be a kind of comptroller on the commiffary or ftorekeepers for that division; and fhould be furnished with provisions and neceffary ftores to make prefents to, and to entertain the Indians, when they come to him; and to fupply their neceffities: He should, for this reason, have a right to make an order on the magazine of his division, for this purpose.

Fifthly, In other parts of our frontier, that

New 1 for 1s of fs of that t; it bence muft But yet, iway, ıd itthe on at that nting

comkind ftored be ftores ie Infupthis er on pur-

ntier, that

that are not the immediate refidence and country of Indians, fome other fpecies of barrier should be thought of, of which nothing can be more effectual than a barrier Colony: But even this cannot be carried (as is hereafter explained) into execution and effect, without this previous measure of a fystem of entrepôts in the country between us and the enemy. The nature of this fyftem, must depend on the nature of the ground, which can only be determined by a particular view, and will then immediately be best known to military men; but all mankind must know that no body of men, whether as an army, or as an emigration of Colonifis, can march from one country to an ever, through an inhospitable wilderness, without magazines; nor with any fafety, without pofts; communicating amongft each other by practicable roads, to which to retire in cafe of accidents, repulse, or delay.

It is a fact which experience evinces the truth of, that we have always been able to outfettle the French; and have driven the Indians out of the country, more by fettling than fighting; and that wherever our fettlements have been wifely and completely made, the French neither by themfelves, nor their dogs of war, the Indians, have been able to remove us. It is upon this fact that I found the proprie y of the measure of fet-Q_3 tling

tling a barrier Colony in those parts of our frontiers, which are not the immediate refidence or hunting grounds of our Indians. This is a meafure that will be effectual; and will not only in time pay its expence, but make as great returns as any of our prefent Colonies do: will give a ftrength and unity to our dominions in North America; and give us possession of the country, as well as settlements in it. But above all this, the ftate and circumstances of our settlements, renders such a meafure not only proper and eligible, but absolutely necessary. The English fettlements, as they are at prefent circumstanced, are absolutely at a stand; they are settled up to the mountains: and in the mountains there is no where together, land fufficient for a fettlement large enough to fubfift by itfelf, and to defend itfelf, and preferve a communication with the prefent fettlements.

If the English would advance one step further, or cover themselves where they are, it must be at once, by one large step over the mountains, with a numerous and military Colony. Where such should be settled, I do not now take upon me to say: at prefent I shall only point out the measure and the nature of it*, by inferting two schemes, one

* This is transcribed from a memorial fent to lord Halifax, 1754; with which memorial the two fehemes here

our lence is a not ic as onies our e us nents cirfuch but ttleiced, d up: tains cient t by rve a ents. step are, over

nilitled, preand mes, one

heme**s** here one of Mr. Franklin's; the other of your memorialist: and if I might indulge myself with scheming, I should imagine that two fuch were sufficient, and only requisite and proper: one at the back of Virginia, filling up the vacant space between the Five Nations and southern confederacy, and connecting, into a one system, our barrier: The other somewhere in the Cohass on Connecticut river, or wherever best adapted to cover the four New England colonies. These, with the little settlements mentioned above in the Indian countries, completes my idea of this branch.

*The dominion then of the lakes, being maintained by a Briti/h navy of armed veffels, fuited to the nature of the fervice, according to a plan proposed by your memorialist, in June 1754, to the commissioners met at Albany; which part of the general frontier is, according to that proposal, by order from England, and at the expence of the crown, now carried into execution; completes the whole of my idea of this frontier.

These matters being thus proposed, I do not at all enter into that point of their exe-

here referred to were fent : they are omitted, as not now neceffary—but by an overfight, the paragraph referring to them was left ftanding.

* Vide at the end of this.

Q4

cution,

cution, which is the duty of the military, as it is a matter in which the judgment of a civil man may not have its weight; nor into the manner of removing the French from their encroachments : yet I cannot but in general observe, that as the present military object of his Majesty's service in this country, is either to erect forts, or to demolifh those erected by the French on his Majesty's lands; and as the way to all fuch lies thro' woods and wilderneffes; there is a proper fphere of action peculiar to each, both for his Majesty's regular troops, and for the provincial troops of the country. The provincial forces of these countries, as irregulars or light troops, can, the best of any forces in the world, efcort his Majefty's troops through these woods, to where their proper fcene of action lies; they can also in the fame manner hand up all their convoys; and would, I am perfuaded, fhould any occasion call for their fervice, act with bravery and fpirit: They are also fit for what may be properly called an expedition; fome excurfion a la brufque, of ten or twenty days continuance : They should therefore be employed either as a covering army, or kept with the regular army *, in companies of light

* This part of the plan, as it was afterward more fully explained, was adopted by the first creation of light infantry in our fervice in 1757. . . .

infantry,

infantry, for efcorts, fcouring, and fcouting parties; while the regular troops, as a main body, marching by thefe means without being harraffed, fuftain them: while his Majefty's troops alone are fit for the various duties and fervices of a continued regular campaign, and for the fatigues, and perfeverance, and fkill, neceflary in a fiege.

I muft also observe, that this is not proposed as a scheme to be executed all at once; but, as a general plan of operations, to be preferved and attended to in the whole; to which every part of our measures, as they schall arise into action and come upon the field, are to be referred; to which, in all seasons and at all occasions, as from time to time such schall offer or serve, our measures must be directed; and to which every individual, and every part, must conspire and co-operate to form a whole.

T. POWNALL.

C O N-

y, as of a into from ut in litary ounnolifh efty's thro' roper h for the proulars orces roops roper the and afion and ly be kcurconemkept light more f light ntry,

(234)

*CONSIDERATIONS towards a General Pian of Meafures for the English Provinces in America.

THE plan of the French measures in building a line of forts round the English fettlements, 1 s:

1/t. To cut the English off from all communication of alliance or trade with the Indians.

" The reafon of building the fort Cadta-" raqui.

" They found it neceffary to build this fort for a bulwark against the incursions of the Iroquois, and to interrupt the trade of skins that these favages maintain with the inhabitants of New York, and

* This memorial was laid before the commiffioners of the feveral provinces met in congrefs at Albany, in 1754, and was adopted by them. Ireceived by a committee their thanks, and a defire that I would fuffer copies to be taken by the commiffioners of each Colony, for the confideration of their refpective governments. This memorial was fent to England with the reft of the papers of the congrefs; and the meafure was immediately adopted by government, and ordered accordingly to be carried into execution in 1755; and became in its effect a decifive flroke.

" the

Pian inces

s in the

omthe

idta-

this fions the ntain and

ers of

y, in nittee ies to or the This hapers doptarried a de-

the

(235)

" the Hollanders, who have found a new " Colony there, for they furnish the favages " with commodities at cheaper rates than " the French of Canada."—Father Henepin, chap. 4.

"The fcheme and defign of building "the fort at Niagara. Such a fort as this might eafily interrupt the commerce be-"twixt thefe people and the English and "Dutch in New York. Their custom is, "to carry to New York the skins of elks, beavers, and several forts of beasts, which "they hunt and seek after, for two or three hundred leagues from their own home. Now, they being obliged to pass and repass near the mouth of the river Niagara, we might easily stop them by fair means in time of peace, or by open force in time of war, and thus oblige them to turn "their commerce on Canada."—Chap. 7.

The defign of building the fort Cananifligoyan, on the Lake Superior.

" 'Tis fome years fince Mr. Dulkut " built a fort upon this Lake, where he had " large magazines of all forts of goods. " That fort was called Cananiftigoyan, and " did confiderable differvice to the English " fettlements in Hudfon's Bay."

> La Hanton's Memoirs of North America, p. 214. 2dly.

2*dly*. To make a line of circumvallation, to confine the English settlements within such bounds as the French are pleased to thus fet to, the English provinces.

Many proofs might be alledged on this head, but the following is more than fufficient.

The fummons of furrender fent by the French officer to the English officer, at the forks of Monongahela.

3dly. To join Louifiania and Canada, to become mafters of the Lakes, and make the whole Continent ONE FRENCH KINGDOM. I plainly perceived by what relations I had of feveral particulars in different nations, that it was not a matter of great difficulty to make a confiderable effablifhment to the fouth-eaft of the Great Lakes; and that by the conveniency of a great river called Ohio, which paffes through the country of the Iroquois, a paffage might be made into the great fea at Cape Florida."—Father Henepin, chap. 4.

Chaarlevoix's Journal Historie, Nov. 8th, 1721, vol. 6. pag. 157.

Il nést point dans toute la Louyfiane, de lieu plus ation, vithin o thus

n this fuf-

y the t the

a, to te the DOM. I had tions, culty nt to ; and river n the night Flo-

721,

e lieu plus plus proprepour un etablifement, que celuila [viz. riviere Ohio,] ni où il importe devantage d'en avoir un. — D'ailleurs, la communication avec le Canada, n'y est pas moins facile que par la riviere des Illinois, & le chemin est beaucop plus court.

"The Lake Ontario, or Frontenac, is cafily navigable, and that with great veffels."—Father Henepin, chap. 6.

In 1678, the French had a brigantine of ten tons on the Lake Ontario.—Chap. 14.

In 1679, a ship of 60 tons on Lake Erie. --Chap. 19.

The whole back country which they divide into Canada and Louisiania, they call New France.

THE ENGLISH MEASURES THEREFORE SHOULD BE,

I. To

2

I. To open themfelves a passage to, and a communication with, the Indians.

II. To disjoin and keep feparate Louifiania and Canada.

III. To throw off this yoke of forts, which the French are laying on their necks.

The only way for the English to do this, is to become matters of the Indian countries, fo as to fecure themselves, and to protect the Indians. Then, and then only, would the English have a real, an actual interest and alliance with the Indians.

There appears two ways of effecting this.

Either to difpute with force and arms, every pafs and hold in the country with the French, and to fecure fuch with forts and garrifons; or to become mafters of the Lakes, and to acquire the dominion of that navigation.

The first considered.

The French government in Canada, is a military united power; is calculated for military adventures; is founded and actually fettled in fuch adventures; does not confift of 6 faims and a

_oui-

forts, eks.

this, tries, t the d the and

this.

rms, i the and ikes, iavi-

is a nilifetft of um3 farms and fettlements of farmers, but of forts and fettlements of foldiers; is actually poffefied of fuch paffes and holds, and has fecured them by forts. The undertaking fuch military adventures, and building and garrifoning fuch forts, is actually but carrying on the ordinary method and regular plan of fettling their Colonies, for which both the people and government of Canada is formed. Whereas the English provinces confift of farms and farmers, and fettlements of labouring, not of fighting men, who live and maintain their families by the culture of their respective settlements; cannot therefore be draughted out, and employed in military adventures, without ruining them and their families, and their fettlements. Men cannot fettle and fight too. They could fight as well as the French, but then must give over fettling. They make the best fettlements in the world, but then this fixes the neceffity of their labouring on a particular fpot; whereas military adventures require them to be unfettled, ready to march, and be employed at any place, at any time. As thus the English provinces are not in their conftituents, fo neither are they in their government, formed for military fervice: THEY HAVE NO MILITARY ESTABLISHMENT, NO part of them felected, trained and kept a constant standing force (as the French have) for this fervice alone: The French therefore always always will be, as they have hitherto been, masters in the field. They will beat us at the difpute of every pafs, were they even to fet out with us at this moment. What they have they can keep; what we had, they have taken part from us, and can take the reft when they will. But as they are now fituatcd, have forts and garrifons in almost every pass of the country, they can, at a moment's warning, draw together an army, well ferved with artillery, in any part of the Back Continent; while the English, if they could raife one in a year or two's time, could not march it (as they are now circumstanced) to any place where it was wanted, while the neceffity of the fervice continued. The meafure therefore most reasonable and most likely to fucceed, is, to fet the first step where we have already a *footing*. We have in the Indian country, a fort. a garifon, A PORT; under the defence of this, THE ENGLISH MAY BUILD A FLEET that fhall.

Firft, Open a passage and communication to the Indians :

Second, That may establish a trade of the most easy management, and the greatest profit:

Third, That would divide and cut off Louifiana from Canada.

1. This

1. This is a pais the French are not poffeffed of; a pais that all the forts they have built are of no use to the defence of; a pais that the English, in their own way, in which they have always been superior to the French, could dispute with the French, and beat them out of; a pais where our proper force could be united, and where no artifice of the French could divide and diffipate it, $\Im c.$ $\Im c.$

2. The navigation of the Lakes would eftablish a mart where the Indians of every nation would refort.

" In fummer time, feveral northern nations come to hunt and fifh in thefe parts [he here fpeaks of the Lake Superior] and bring with them the beaver fkins they have got in the winter, in order to truck with the Coureurs de Bois, who do not fail to meet them there every year."

Labontain's Memoirs of North America, pag. 214.

If the trade of the Hudson's Bay company, which is, as it were, only in the skirts of the great Continent, is found to beneficial, what might not this be, that is in the very heart of it?

The back fettlements will, in time, want a vent for their produce.

Vol. II. R. This

eeng is at n to they have reft uatvery ent's rved lonould not .) to the The noft hcre the RΤ; ISH

tion

the ateft

off

This

This trade would open to them fuch a vent.

if and *2d*. Being mafters of this pafs, and this trade, would give the English the command of the Indian country, and confequently of the Indians, which is the only way to preferve their fidelity and alliance : 'tis the only way to enable them to continue our friends.

The example of the navigation and trade of the Cafpian Lake, may not only be a rule of experience, but is also a most encouraging example.

Many other reafons for; and confequences of, this measure might be offered; but this paper does not mean to give reasons, but to propose confiderations.

3. If the English were masters of the Lakes, and had confequently the friendship of the Indians, the French could have little or no communication between Louisiania and Canada; and no communication, no effectual one, with most of the forts they have built up and down the country, $\mathfrak{Sc. Sc.}$

Upon the whole, this measure is adapted to the nature of the strength of the provinces , and comonfeonly nce :

trade rule trag-

this this this

the Ifhip little iania o efhave

pted winces ces who are maritime, and numbers of whofe people are mariners; take into this denomination boatmen, and perhaps one-third or a quarter at leaft, may be fuch.

The navigation of the fea and rivers on one fide, and of the lakes on the other, would form these PROVINCES INTO A KINGDOM, equal, if not superior, to the kingdoms of New France.

All that can be done at prefent, is, under the defence of Fort Ofwego, to fecure the dominion of the Lake Ontario: and in the mean while, to fecure by forts, the paffes upon the frontiers of our own fettlements, (diffinguish here the frontiers of the fettlements from the frontiers of the provinces) and those of our allies, to protect ourfelves and them.

This being done, we fhould attempt and acquire (for it is in our power) the dominion of all the Lakes, (perhaps the Lake Superior excepted.) New Hampfhire, Maffachufetts, and Rhode Ifland, might be allotted to Lake Champlain; Connecticut, New York and New Jerfey, to Lake Ontario; Pennfylvania, Maryland, Virginia, and perhaps the Carolinas too, to the Lakes Erie, Illinois, *&c.*

" If

" If the English would pursue their measures to the best advantage, they ought to engage the Isonontowanes, [the Senekas,] or the Goyogowanes, [Cayuga,] to go and settle upon the banks of the Lake Erie, the mouth of the river Conde; and at the same time, they ought to build a fort there, with some long barques and brigantines; for this is the most convenient and advantageous post of all that country, and that for an infinity of reafons, which I am obliged to conceal.

"Befides this fort, they fhould build another at the mouth of the river De François, and then it would be abfolutely impoffible for the Coureurs de Bois, to reach the Lakes."

La Hontain, page 273.

Albany, June 1754. T. POWNALL.

№ IX.

N° IX.

HE ideas of the fervice contained in the paper above, lead by fair confequence to the following proposition-" * That after the English had been repeat-" edly difappointed in their attempts to pe-" netrate the country by the way of Crown-" point and lake Champlain, and had loft " Ofwego and the command of the lake " Ontario; confidering the reafon there was " also to expect the defection of the Indians " in confequence thereof; there remained " no other alternative, but either to make " peace, or to change the object of the war, " by making a direct attack up the river " St. Lawrence upon Quebec itfelf; urged " to a radical destruction of Canada." The writer of these papers came over to England in the latter end of the year 1756, to propofe and state these measures, nearly in the fame form as was afterwards repeated by the paper that follows; particularly marking the necessity of two fleets, and two armies: One army deftined for the attack; the other under orders to inveft Canada, by taking post fomewhere between Albany and Montreal, fo as to cover the English Colonies: One

> * Letter to Lord Halifax, 1756. R 3

fleet

they [the ga,] the nde; wild and nvethat rea-

heir

uild De itely , to 3.

IX.

fleet to effort and convoy the army up the river St. Lawrence; and the other to cover and protect the fea-line of the Colonies. The object was adopted. Why nothing was done in the year 1757, and why no more was done in the year 1758, than the taking of Louïfbourg, will be explained on a future occafion; the ideas contained in the following paper lead to the reft.——

IDEA of the SERVICE IN AMERICA, for the year 1759.

BOSTON, Dec. 5th, 1758.

TF the point difputed between us and the French, be determinately and precifely underftood, the manner of conducting it may be foon fixed: If we are still, as we were at the first breaking out of the war, disputing about a boundary line, and for the poffeffion of fuch posts, communications, and passes, as may be a foundation to our possesfions of a future dominion in America, we are still engaged in a petty skirmishing war: from the state of which it was always plain, and experience now proves it, that we shall ever be inferior, and beaten by the French ; for the French have long ago, by a continued fystem of measures, been taking poffeffion of fuch posts as hath given them that foundation;

(247)

foundation : They have already eftablished that which we must fight to establish, inch by inch.

If we have changed the point, and brought it to its true iflue, its natural crifis; whether we, as provinces of Great Britain, or Canada as the province of France, fhall be fuperior in America; then the fervice to be done, is a general invation of Canada, in conjunction with the European troops and fleet; then is our natural firength employed, and we must confequently be as naturally fuperior.

This being fixed, the next point is, where the real attack must be made. The fame reafons that flow the necessity of fuch a general attack, flow that it will never effectually be carried on, over land; for, if it could, Canada might as effectually be deftroyed, by the petty skirmishing war, for posts, pass, &c. as by a general invation. But experience has now shown, (what reason might have feen fome time ago) that, as the flate of the fervice is circumstanced between us and the French, that cannot be; the pofferfion which the enemy has of the posts of strength, the corrying-places, passes, water communications, and roads; by forts, redoubts, and their Indians; would render the passage to Canada R 4

the over I'he one was g of ture

CA,

the unbe · at ing lefand efare ar: in, nall h: tiofnat n;

Canada by land, the * work of a campaign, even with fucces; but finally also, the fucces doubtful. The road to Quebec, up St. Lawrence river, we poffefs by the fuperiority of our marine navigation. There is neither danger ner difficulty, ner do I fee how there can be any opposition, to hinder the fleet getting up to the illand of Orleans; and a fuperior army in possession of that, may, by proper measures, command the reft of the way to Quebec $-\frac{1}{7}$. If our army can once fet down before Quebec, it must take it: If Quebec be taken, the capitulation may at leaft ftrip Canada of all the regulars; after which the inhabitants might poffibly be induced to furrender.

If this actack be determined, the fleet of transports will be efforted up the river by the frigates, bombs, and other small veffels of war: But while our forces are all up the river, a very flrong squadron feems necessary to cover the maritime parts of our own Colonies.

I am told, that many French veffels proceed, early in fpring, to the bay of Gafpee, before the river St. Lawrence is navigable;

+ Did not the event literally justify this?

and

^{*} The going to take possifion of the country in 1760, after Quebec had been taken in 1759, proved the work of a campaign.

aign, ccefs Lawty of danthere fleet and a the e fet : If ny at after e in-

et of r by effels b the ry to es.

propee, ole ;

760, work

and

and lie there till the river breaks up; then flip up without danger, when for fome time it would be almost impossible to cross the gulph; for as foon as the ice breaks up in the river, it is prefently clear; but the ice embayed in the gulph, fwims about for a long time, and renders the navigation of that gulph extremely dangerous, long after the river may be navigated with fafety. If this fact be true, it feems neceffary, that two or three of the ships of war should proceed to Gaspee, before the river St. Lawrence breaks up, in order to prevent any fuccours being fent up the river in spring.

But although this attempt on Quebec, by way of St. Lawrence river, may be the only real, and will be the only effectual attack on Canada: yet one other, if not two false attacks will be neceffary; one by way of lake Champlain; the other by way of lake Ontario. That by way of lake Champlain may, as far as Crown-point, be offensive; and should then change into a defensive measure, by taking ftrong post there, with a garrison which will effectually check the enemy at that gate of the country; and from whence continual fcouting parties, to harrafs the fettlements, and beat up the quarters of the enemy, should be fent down the lake. As there are now fo many regiments at Albany, Sckenectady, 3

Sckenectady, fort Edward, and the posts on the river; the taking fort Carillon, at Tieonderôga, and of confequence fort St. Frederick at Crown-point, might be effected with thefe, together with fuch provincials as shall be thought necessary; (if not in winter yct) before the time for embarking for St. Lawrence river approaches : and this time appears the more proper, as it may poffibly be before the French can fufficiently relieve it. The reafon that makes me think that this should be attempted is, that the poffeffion of this post is an effectual investing of Canada in that quarter: The reafon why I think no more fhould be attempted is, that it would prove unfuccefsful, and that all the labour and expence that is employed in the attempt is loft as foon as it is given over.

As we have now fo good an entrepôt towards lake Ontario, as the fort at the Oneida carrying-place; it is now in our power to attempt acting on that lake; the want of this rendered all attempts there before, abortive and unfupportable. An appearance of an attack on Canada by that way, muft greatly alarm the enemy at Montreal; and, though I do verily believe we fhall never fucceed to make an effectual irruption that way, until Quebec be taken; yet as whatever fhall be done on that lake towards fuch an attempt, 11

1a

P ti

d

tl d

a' tl A

C C C

0

n N

ſ

ť

С

ts on Tie-Freected ls as inter r St. time fibly lieve that ffefg of hy I that the the

toneiwer t of oore of nuft nd, ever that ever an pt, (251)

attempt, viz. taking post at some part on the lake, and building veffels, will have a collateral effect; even supposing the first to prove abortive, that will prove a most effential point of fervice, namely, the gaining dominion of the navigation of the lake. So that should nothing else be done, yet what is done, and what is spent, will not be thrown away; but remain a chief corner-flone in the foundation of the British dominion in America:-Befides, if we remain, during the campaign, fuperior in the lake; the enemies communication with their fouthern pofts is cut off; their connection with the Indians of the Five Nations interrupted; and we may, in the course of chances, possibly take This amphibious kind of fervice Niagara. feems adapted to the provincials, especially those of New York and Rhode Island, accuftomed to privateering and batteauing: but these should be supported by good garrifons of regulars, in fuch posts as may be found neceffary to be taken at the entrepôt on the Oneida carrying-place, and at the port it shall be found necessary to possess on the lake.

As to the number of regular troops neceffary for the attack on Quebec, I have not prefumed to fpeak, for I am no judge; but a number of provincials will certainly be neceffary, and thefe fuch as are used to the water, and marine navigation; for fuch will be

be of the most effential fervice in the passage of the army from the lower end of the life of Orleans to Quebec, where most of the difficulty and danger will lie. Now for this fervice, none can be fo well adapted as the people of the province of Maflachufetts Bay; as they are all, in the fouthern parts, whalers and fifhermen. After the troops are landed near Quebec, numbers will be wanted, fuch as are used to carrying heavy lumber and timber, &c. through the woods. Now for this fervice, none can be fo well adapted as the inhabitants of New Hampfhire, and the county of York, in the province of Maffachufetts Bay, who are fo perfectly accustomed to the masting fervice, that is, fetching the great mafts down from the woods; befides, the people of Maffachufetts in the counties of Hampshire, Worcester and York, are the beft wood hunters in America; and would therefore (difpofed in proper outpofts,) be the best adapted to the keeping the camp before Quebec, quiet from the enemies partizans and Indians; or perhaps in breaking up the enemies fettlements in the country, while the regulars were taking their towns. For this purpose also, I should think, if about a hundred thorough wood hunters, properly officered, could be obtained in the county of York; a fcout of fuch might make an attempt upon the fettlements by way of Chaudier river. Such a fcout, to

e Hle of the or this as the ufetts parts, roops ill be heavy oods. well ampproper-, that 1 the letts r and rica; outping the haps ts in king ould vood ainfuch ents out, to

affage

to the purpofes of alarming and keeping the enemy in abeyance there, or perhaps breaking up the fettlements; is practicable, and, I think, with early notice, fuch a fcout may

be obtained.

These are the services our people are fitted for; and therefore, as far as relate to the people of the province his Majefty has consmitted to my care, I can be politive, that if his Majefty's General would have a real and effectual fervice from them, they must be employed in fuch. Take those who live inland and carry them to fea; or those who have lived by the fea, and march them through the woods; they will be useles and fickly. Employ each in their proper element: let those who are naturally connected with Hudson's river, and acquainted with inland navigation, be employed up in the back country, and lakes to the westward; and those who border on the fea, and are ufed to marine navigation, be employed in the fervice that goes by fea to the eaftward; and then for every ten men on paper, there will be ten men's real fervice.

I have in this paper confined my idea to the invafion of Canada, and the attacks on that country; and fo have faid nothing of that very neceffary fervice, the erecting a fort

I have confined my idea to Canada, and have therefore faid nothing of fort Du Quefne; but if I had extended my idea to that part, I should have endeavoured to confider how far, or not, it might be practicable to break up the enemies fettlements on the Ohio, and the Illinois country; founded on this opinion of Mr. Vaudreuil himfelf, in his letter to his court, when governor of Loui. fiana, November 1748.——" It would be " very eafy for the English, by means of " the river Ohio, to form an entrepôt at " Prudehomme, to ferve them as a retreat, " having the nations of the Shawöanefe, " Cherokees and Chickafaws on their back " and to support them. From this entre-" pôt it would not be difficult to penetrate " to the Akanfaes, Panis, Ofagaes, Padouces, " and Miffouris, and all the Ohio nations " of that country, if the posts and fettle-" ments of the Illinois were broken up, as " they would certainly be, did the English " fettle and fortify at Prudehomme; not " only the inhabitants of the Illinois would " be loft to us, but also the inhabitants " near New Orleans would be fo greatly "diffrefied for want of the fuccours and " provisions of this country, the granery to " it.

ferent effed.

, and t Du dea to conicable on the led on in his Louiild be ins of oôt at etreat. anese, · back entreietrate ouces, ations lettleip, as nglifh ; not vould itants reatly s and ery to " it, " it, by the lofs of the trade with that post. " that it would be difficult for them to " fubfift; it would be impoffible to main-" tain the expence they must live at with-" out it, and they must be obliged to " abandon the colony : But fhould not " matters be fo bad as this, yet, were the " pofts of the Illinois taken away, the " colony would not be able to extend itfelf " at furtheft beyond the post of the Natches, " without a very ftrong garrifon at the poft " of Akanfaes, and at best that post would " be too low to cover the bunting ground."

I should have extended my idea, to an attempt by a West India squadron with troops raifed in the iflands on Mobile; for nothing would more embarrafs the enemy's Indian affairs in Louisiana, than the taking this place, the grand rendezvous at all their treaties—For they support a garrison here; amongst other reasons, for this also, (as Mr. Vaudreuil, in one of his letters to the court, fays) " to influence the Indians, as there " are at our meetings and treaties, held " here annually with the Indians, fome-" times 2, fometimes 3,000 Indians pre-" fent."

I fhould also have recommended the taking post at Ockfusqué amongst the Creeks, becaufe, fays Mr. Vaudreuil, " If the meafures " fures of which this might be a foundation, fhould be properly carried into execution by the English, it would oblige the French to retire from their fort at Alibamôus down to the Mobile."

T. POWNALL.

t

1

i

To the Right Honourable Mr. Secretary Pitt.

In confirmation of the opinion here given of the measures proposed, and of the plan laid down; the reader is here defired to refer to the events of the year 1759 in America.

Quebec was taken by general Townshend, the moment that the army was enabled to fet down before it, by the greatly hazarded, and gloriously successful stroke of general Wolfe.

The operations of the army under general Amherst, could not, by all the skill and determined perfeverance of that excellent officer, be pushed further than Crown-point, and there became defensive by fortifying that point.

The operations up the Mohawks river, and on lake Ontario, were carried just to that effect which opened the way for the next found into would their bile."

LL.

given e plan to re-59 in

hend, led to arded, eneral

eneral 1 and ellent point, g that

river, ift to r the next next campaign, 1760, when general Amherst went that way to take possession of Canada.

Amidît thefe objects, I mention the taking posseficient of the Penobscot country, and the building a fort there by * the governor of the Massachusetts province, merely as it was proposed in the paper above; as the proposal was adopted by the ministers at that time; and as the execution received the approbation of his Majesty, fignified by Mr. Pitt, his minister.

The whole fleet was taken up the river St. Lawrence; where, as general Wolfe expressly declares, it was a part of the force least adapted to the object: the fea-line of the colonies was left uncovered and open. If the French had had fense enough to have fent two fhips of the line, with a frigate or two, and one or two bomb-ketches, they might have burnt Halifax, Bofton, New York, or Philadelphia, without interruption; or even if fuch measure had not been carried to that degree of fuccess, they might have raifed fuch an alarm as should have broken up feme of our active, offensive operations, inorder to come to the defence of this fea-line;

* T. POWNALL.

Vol. II.

S

and,

and, perhaps, thus the whole of the operations of 1759 have been difconcerted and defeated. To enquire why this was done, would at this time become a mere criticifm; for as, by good luck, no fuch accident happened, it is right that fuccefs fhould juftify every measure.

To give reafons why nothing was attempted towards the quarters of Louifiana at that time, will be the folution of fome future difcufion.

The following Memorial, fent in the fame line of communication, and written on the fuppofition, that if France still retained certain dominions thus bounded in America, the British Colonies would be adequately protected, and the British Dominion secured to Great Britain—seems at this time not improper to follow the above.

Nº X.

С

a C

I

al fl p ti b p m

0

operaed and done, icifm; t hapjuftify

t that re dif-

e fame on the ed cernerica, uately ecured ot im-

Nº X.

(259)

N° X.

MEMORIAL.

Observations on a line of demarkation between the English and French in North America, so far as it respects that continent only.

I F the English policy does not extend to the obtaining and preferving the intire possible possible

Under this head it will be previoufly neceffary, that the French fix precifely what are the boundaries between Louifiana and Canada, which they divided about the year 1752.

And next, as the pofiefilion of the Indian alliance is of the utmost confequence—it should be precisely determined what are the possession of the nations and tribes in alliance with the English; and such by actual defoription put under the British protection: For by mistaking this point, we may, as has been done, bottom our cause on S_2 a founa foundation which cannot fupport itfelf, and neglect one that perhaps promifes lefs, but must really support it.

If the waters of the lakes, of St. Lawrence and Miffifippi rivers, are to be the bounds between the British and the French rights; 'twill be of confequence, in a very precife and determinate manner to fpecify what is meant by fuch: For the French pretend to claim no other; but by that claim extend their pretentions to the head of every water which runs into either of these; and by that pretence claim all the north and north-weft of Nova Scotia and New England, Lake George and Wood Creek, the carrying-place at the head of the Mohawks river, all the Ohio, Cherokee, and other rivers which on the back of the Carolinas run into the Miffifippi, 'Tis therefore needlefs here to fay, that the enemy must be bounded by fome determinate line of demarkation.

Wherever and howfoever fuch shall be fixed, fuch line will confist of four different parts, the rights of which are founded each on very different, and the interest and policy of which must depend on very different reasonings. tlelf, s lefs,

rence ounds ghts; recife hat is nd to extend water by that 1-weft Lake -place ll the ch on to the to fay, fome

all be fferent d each policy fferent

As

As this method of confidering the line of the British empire in America is absolutely neceffary to a just idea whereon to treat about it, this paper prefumes to point out *the parts* of faid line, and to suggest some observations on the *principle* on which each part is founded.

> I. The first part confiss of the British rights in Hudson's bay, and the Labradore coast on the Atlantic.

And here, fuppofing the British rights to be fettled and undifturbed in Hudson's bay, it may be of use to stipulate some acts of trade; that, while the company purchase the French furs, the French may not be enabled to fupply their Indian ftores with English European goods, on Lake Superior, &c. without which it would be difficult for them to maintain their Indian alliances with the Affenipoels, Algonkins, Otawawaes, &c. in those parts: if therefore an English store, to be fupplied with the company's goods, was by way of ceffion fixed on Lake Superior, or river Michipocoton, (where now, as is faid, the French have a ftore) it would have a proper effect to maintain a ballance in the Indian interest, and might lead, according to French policy, to much higher purpofes. But though this be a matter more to be S-3 withed, withed, than likely to be obtained and effected, yet it may not have been improper to have fuggefled it.

262

(

2. As the enemy obtained of Britain a right to fifh, and cure their fifh on the north parts of Newfoundland, as a ceffion of no confequence to the English; fo will they, no doubt, endeavour at fome fuch acquisition, by concession of a right to do the fame on the Labradore coaft. They know the worth of this; they know the fifthery continues to leffen on the banks and to the fouthward; they know the best and most plentiful is to the northward, and will hope, from our inexperience of this truth, to keep ftill to the northward of us. The Labradore coast as much exceeds the north of Newfoundland. as that does the fouthward part, for plenty of fish. This coast is not that inhospitable, inacceffible land of terrors that it has been reprefented; the climate, like all others uncleared of its wood and uncultivated, has its extremes; but is at the fame time the most delightful in its mean that can be conceived. It not only abounds with the fineft harbours, but, like all the eaflern fhore of the north part of North America, is fohemm'd in with islands, that veffels may fail within fuch the whole length of it, as within a harbour; where there is an inexhauftible fource of fifh and peltry, and

ffect-

ain a north of no ey, no on, by n the rth of es to ward; is to ır ino the ift as lland, lenty table. been s unas its moft eived. ours, hpart lands, whole there eltry, and

and they add also of naval stores, but this not certain. The chart sent herewith, done by, and from the observations of an adventurer from Boston, will give an idea of it.

> II. The next part of the line is that which muft divide New England and Nova Scotia from Canada. And although there can be no doubt of the British right extending up to the river St. Lawrence, yet possibly the following observation may not be altogether useles, in case the intire posfession of such right may be in some measure receded from.

A river, and all the navigable waters which communicate with it, if poffeffed by people the leaft converfant in commerce, become by a confequential intercommunion, the natural basis of a one interest; and as the two fides of fuch a river cannot, in the nature of things, be divided into two interefts; fo it may be feen that a river was never yet a boundary between two commercial nations, nor never could be. 'Tis therefore fo far from being a natural boundary to fuch, that it is the most unnatural boundary that can be devised, and the most impracticable to attempt to divide two nations in that very point where they are the most intimately connected. S 4

connected. Let politics endeavour to divide the two fides of fuch a river between two people, yet they will live under and in one and the fame interest; and confequently, whichever fide is the predominant intereft, that will lead and govern the other alfo. The river St. Laurence being the very feat of the French lettlements, and fo far remote from and unconnected with those of the prefent English ones; the British subjects living on St. Laurence river, (fhould any ever fettle there, and on the navigable waters that communicate with it) will, fo long as the French interest predominates there, be had subjects to the British crown; which difaffection and difadvantage will extend itfelf into New England and Nova Scotia, as far as the intercommunion of these borderers extends. Moreover, when there is a natural boundary, the benefit and use of the protection of their own government is neither felt, fought for, nor depended on by the borderers.—On the contrary, if any artificial boundary be all that divides the two governments, the flate of the borderers, in that cafe, creates in them a natural jealoufy and animofity against each other; and as there is no defence in the natural state of the boundary, all the defence and fupport of their interest, that they hope for, or depend on, is in the protection of the government; and confequently borderers,

divide 1 two n one ently, tereft, The of the from refent ng on fettle comrench bjects n and Engcomover, e be-011.11 nor COIIthat

te of

them

rainft

h the

fence

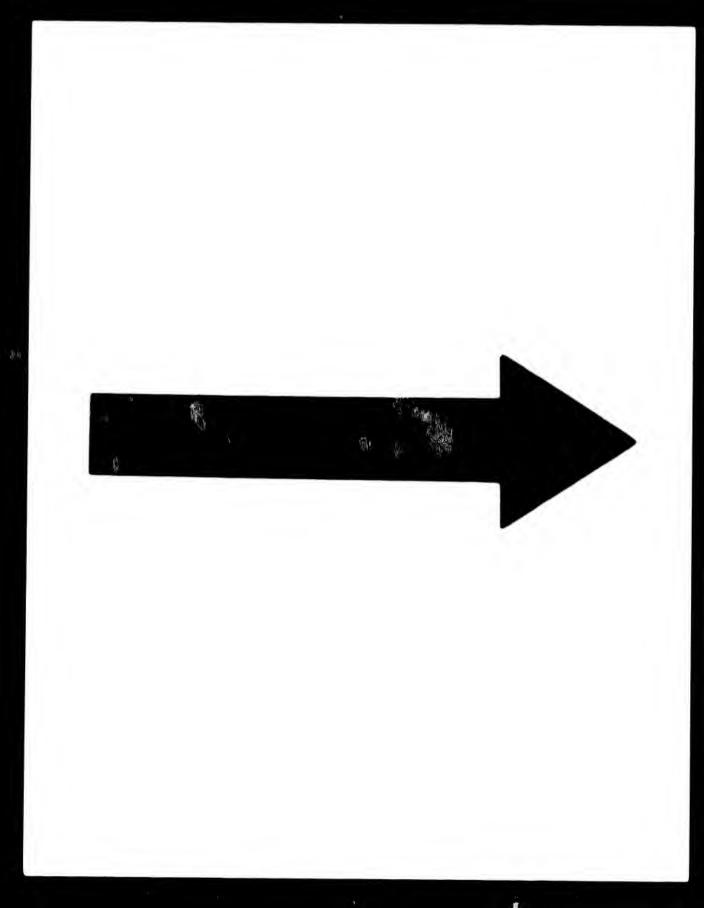
hope

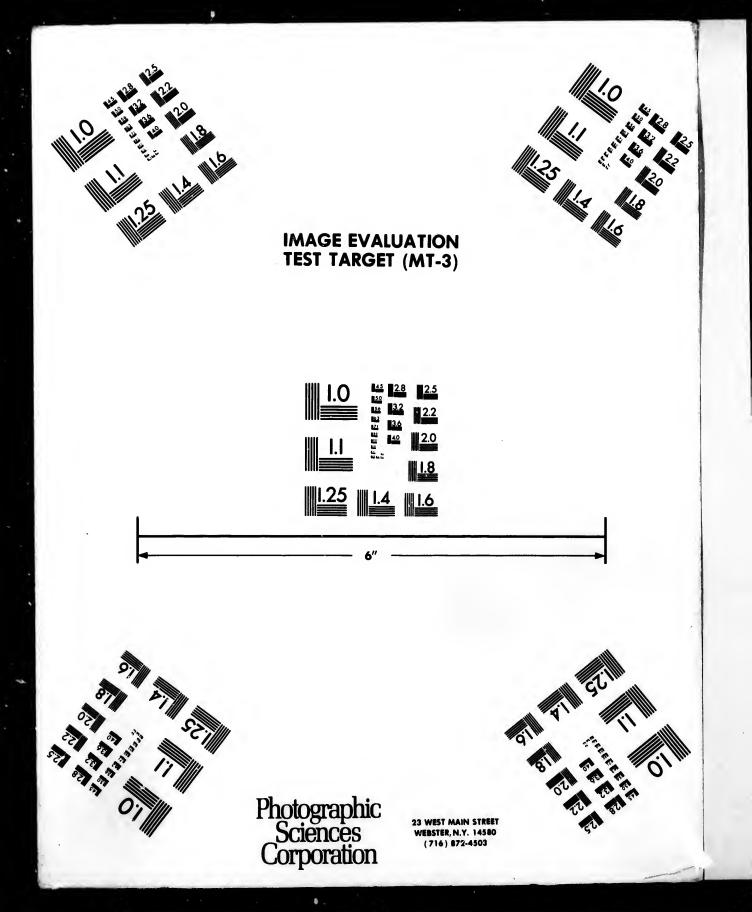
n of bor-

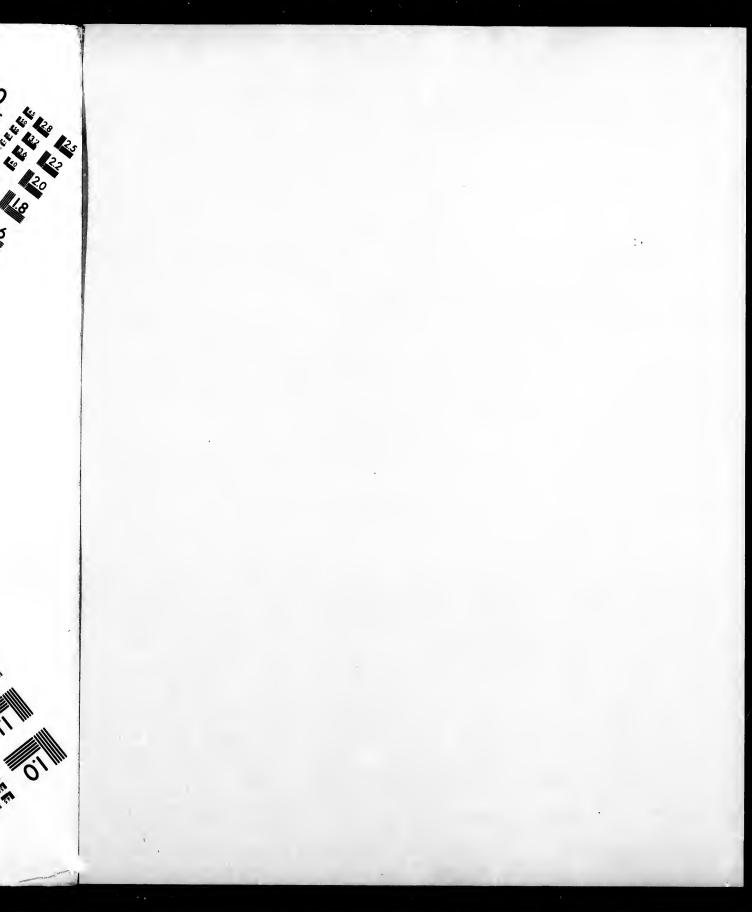
rers,

derers, in fuch cafe, are alway the best affected, and most beneficial fubjects; and possibly the policy of this principle may be better applied to the borders of dependent provinces and Colonies, than to any other members of a government.

There is indeed one very effential objection to this idea of the line; which is, That if any part of the continent on this fide the waters be divided between the British and French, the French, b, the afcendency which they have gained over the Indians, will draw the Indians to live on their part, and have them always ready to pour down upon us, as a continual check and fcourge : but poflibly, fome fuch ftipulation as follows being demanded, might not only put an effectual ftop to fuch proceedings, but obviate, with great propriety, fuch objections as will be prefied upon us, on account of feizing the French veffels prior to the declaration of war; namely, That the French shall be answerable for their Indian allies, which dwell on their lands; and that if any Indian nation or tribe, ally to the French, (as they can be fitted out by none but the French) shall commit hostilities against any of the English Colonies; vessels with letters of marque and reprifal, shall be justified in making reprifals on the veffels and trade belonging







(266)

belonging to the fubjects of the French Colonies; and vice versa.

> III. The next part of faid line, is that which must divide New York and Penfylvania, with the British Indian allies, from Canada and the upper part of Louisiana.

The rights and policy of this line is fo connected with the rights of the Five Nations, and our alliance with them, (which has been explained in the Confiderations of the state of the service in 1755, already prefented, and in a paper flating the nature of the British Indian claim, prefented in 1757) that it were needlefs to repeat fuch at this time, efpecially as the reafonings on that head must much exceed the bounds of this paper.

> IV. The fourth part of the line of demarkation may, from the reafoning above, be supposed to begin fixty miles due fouth from Canahoga, alias Canaoaga, and extends to Florida.

The papers above referred to, afford many and very particular observations, from the reafonings of the French government and ministry, as to the posts and passes in faid tract, to which this paper would; on this head. ench

that and dian pper

s fo Nahich is of eady ture 757) this that this

dening ixty dias t. mathe

the and faid this ead, head, refer itfelf: But if the main channel of the river Miflifippi is not to be the proper line required—in this place occurs the enquiry, Whether there be in the nature of the country, any thing which, forming two different interests, may become the dividing line natural to fuch. If on any navigable river there be fuch falls as divide and abfolutely disjoin the marine navigation from the Inland or Mediterranean navigation, the intercommunion or interest of those two become different; divided each, and each bounded by faid falls : as this division of marine and inland navigation, on fuch interrupted waters is a real existing fact, not only in America, but in every part of the world where the fame circumstances a. found, it were needless further to explain the reason. If therefore the English cannot expect to thare the marine navigation of Miffifippi with the French; and the marine navigation of the French is cut off by the falls from the inland navigation; it appears, that thefe two interests are divided naturally by a line drawn acrofs the falls of the feveral rivers which run into the Miffifippi: and if the fettlements of the English be found in the one region, and those of the French on the other; this line will naturally, and therefore permanently, divide the intereft of thefe two nations, and fo be the best line of peace: and

and as fuch line may be a natural division to their interests in these parts; fo the several falls on faid rivers may prove to be the properest posts for the artificial line of defence. Let it be supposed, as an example only of this reasoning, (for this paper does not presume to point out the specific line) that a line run from Canahôga on lake Erie, by the falls of the Onäback, Ohio, Cherokee rivers, &c. and so directly to the north-west corner of the Spanish rights of Pensacola, with forts at proper posts thereon; and there will be presented an idea of the fort of line here meant.

The reason of beginning this line at Canahôga, depends on the reasonings in the papers above referred to, on the third article.

By the uniting the English line with that of the Spaniard, any French encroachments may lead to the uniting those nations in repelling such, as a common cause; or at least make them reciprocally guaranty for the prefervation of it.

This paper does not enter into particular defcriptions of cafes, nor reafonings of the effects of fuch line of demarkation; but con-7 fines fines itself folely to the *principles* on which the proposals are fuggested.

N. B. The fame principles may be referred to the line between New England, Nova Scotia, and Canada.

T. POWNALL.

Bofton, Oct. 22d. 1759.

1.0.1

や代わってい シート

i de grande en la contrale de la galegala. determiner en la contrale de la forma al contrale en contralation, buccon de la contrale en contralation.

to ral he leole oes ne) ie, ee eft la, re

a-1e r-

at ts ff ie ir e

S

N°. XI.

The following Instructions, (referred to in vol. 1st, and in the Appendix) drawn up by T. POWNALL, and recommended to General BRADDOCK, were, by that Officer, sent to Col. JOHNSON.

OU are to produce to the Indians of the Six Nations, a deed which will be delivered to you by Col. Shirley, and in my name, to recite to them as follows.

Whereas it appears, by a treaty of the Five Nations, made at Albany on the nineteenth day of July 1701, with John Nanfan, Efq; Lt. Governor of New York, That the faid Five Nations did put all their Beaver Hunt, which they won with the fword, then eighty years ago, under the protection of the King of England, to be guarantied to them and their use. And it also appearing, by a deed executed in the year 1726, between the Three Nations Cayouges, Senecaes, and Onondagaes, and the then Governor of New York, that the faid Three Nations did then furrender all the lands lying and being, fixty miles distance, taken directly

o in n up d to tbat

s of l be my

the ineſan, the iver ord, n of to ng, bene-30irce lysen Alv

directly from the waters into the country, beginning from a creek called Canahoqué, on the lake Ofwego, extending along the faid lake to the falls of O'niagära, and along the lake Cataraquis to Sodons creek, and from Sodons creek, to the hill called Tegechunckferôde, and from thence to the creek called Cayhunghâge, as is particularly defcribed in faid deed, including all the caftles of the aforefaid Three Nations, with all the rivers, creeks, and lakes within the faid limits, to be protected and defended by the King of Great Britain, his heirs and fucceffors for ever, to and for the use of them the faid Indians, their heirs and fucceffors for ever.

And it appearing that the French have, from time to time, by fraud and violence, built ftrong forts within the limits of the faid lands, contrary to the covenant-chain of the faid deed and treaties: you are in my name, to affure the faid nations, that I am come, by his Majefty's order, to deftroy all the faid forts, and to build fuch others, as *fhall protect and fecure* the faid lands to *them*, *their heirs and fucceffors* for ever, according to the intent and fpirit of the faid treaty, and do therefore call upon them to take up the hatchet, and come and take poffeffion of their own lands.

Nº XII.

N° XII.

and a

272)

Confiderations on a Paper Currency, by Tench Francis, Esq; Attorney-General of the Province of Pensylvania.

A L L value is given to things, for their fitnefs or power to anfwer or procure the neceffary conveniencies or pleafures of human life.

This value may be confidered as abfolute or relative. Abfolute value terminates in our efteem of any thing, without referring to any other; relative is that which it has compared with another.

The latter only I have occasion to treat of.

Men have power to difcover qualities in a thing which give it value. They can by laws, cuftoms, or fashions greatly encrease that value; yet, to know or fix its worth or price, compared with other things à priori, ori, has always been found beyond their reach and capacity.

This is owing to an inability to forefee, eftimate, and govern exactly all the points and circumstances, on which the value of things turns; which are fuch as are in action, or following the nature and order of things in general, may be foreseen and judged of with some certainty; or which consist of the passions, prejudices, and misapprehenfions of mankind, whose number and influences we cannot rate or calculate.

From the *natural* flate and order of things I think it may be affirmed, that the worth or price of any thing will always be, as the quantity and uses amongst mankind; as the uses directly, and as the quantity reciprocally or inverfely. Ufe is the fole caufe of value, and value the necessary effect of use. Abating these distinctions of cause and effect, useless and worthless, are fynonymous terms. Every man must agree, that if you add to a caule, you must increase the effect; substract from it, and the contrary effect must follow. Let the quantity of any thing be as 20, and the uses as 20, and let it have a value; let the uses be increased to 30, without enlarging the quanity; it is plain, the equal Vol. II. proportion

heir cure s of

by

ieral

lute 5 in ring has

reat

in a by cale orth briori, proportion that every man can enjoy will be as 20 divided by 30, 3ds only. But this being lefs by 3 than each man requires, the demand for it, and confequently the value, must rife. Subfract 10 from the ufes when 20, and then under an equal distribution, each shall have double the value he wants, which must lessen the demand, and the value dependent upon it.

Governing the uses is one of the rational powers, that men have over the value of things.

Experience teaches the meaneft underfkanding, that price depends on quantity, and that * they are to each other inverfely, or the more of one the lefs the other. Water is as neceffary as any thing, and a diamond perhaps as little; yet the fuperfluous plenty of one has rendered it of no worth in moft places, and the fcarcity of the other has carried it to an extravagant price.

Limiting the quantity is another rational power men have over the value of things; and I do not know a third.

From hence it appears, that increasing the uses, and lessening the quantity; and lessening the uses, and increasing the quantity; must * N.B. The demand being a given or fixed quantity. always Il be this, the value, when ation, vants, value

tional ue_of

inderintity, ely, or Water mond blenty moft s car-

tional ings ;

ig the ening must antity. lways always have the fame influence upon the rates and prices of things. Therefore, whenever I shew the effect of one, for brevity's fake, let it be understood, that I suppose the fame consequence will attend the other respectively.

Although I affirm, that variation in quantity or use, shall cause a change in the price of a thing, yet I do not fay, that this change shall be in proportion equal to the variation in the quantity or use; for I think the contrary. To inftance in quantity, let it be in any thing as 30, and let the ufe be as 30, and it shall then have a mean value. The use unchanged, let the quantity be at one time as 20, at another 40. Whoever confiders the prevalence of men's appetites for a scarce commodity, under the dreads and apprehensions of wanting it, with their different abilities to procure it, on one hand, and their great contempt of ufelefs excess on the other, must agree it is more than probable, that the difference between the means and the extremes shall not be the fame in the prices, as in the quantities. Merchants, by experience, have found the truth of what I advance. ł think they have observed, that lessening a commodity one third from the mean quantity; cæteris paribus; nearly doubles the va-T 2 lue;

lue; adding a third, fubftracts one half from it; and that by further increasing or diminishing the quantity, these disproportions between the quantity and prices vastly increase.

It is extremely difficult, if not impoffible, to inveftigate these proportions mathematically; but events springing from use and experience have equal certainty in them; and to all practical purposes are as much to be relied and depended upon.

It is further worth obfervation, that whatever fluctuates much in quantity, and confequently in worth, will fink beneath its mean value.

Suppose the quantity of any thing produced in every 50 years be exactly the fame: let the annual product be as one answerable to the neceffities of mankind, then the value in each year shall be as one, and the whole equal to 50. But if the quantity of the annual product fluctuates, there will be annual fluctuations in the value; but as the proportions of the decrease of value, from experience above stated, will be greater than the proportions of the increase of value, this fluctuation will cause a deficiency in the mean value, which deficiency will always be in proportion to the greatness and quickness of rom diporaftly

ible, natiexand be

hat– nfe– iean

orone: able alue ananthe om his the be cfs of of the changes. This, I prefume, is occafioned by the defire of mankind in general to reft on certainty, rather than rely on what is fluctuating and inconftant, though they fhould expect gain equal to the rifque, and by the low circumftances of the majority of men, whole fortunes, in all prudence, direct to the firft, rather than the latter. The cafe of infurances is an evident proof of this remark. If the infurers gain, which I think muft be admitted, then they receive a premium beyond the value of the rifque, and this again the infured pay for *certainty* againft *contingent loffes*.

These few rules of estimating the value of things, well applied, will, I presume, shew when it is convenient to introduce papermoney into a country, and when it will prove hurtful; what are its advantages and inconveniencies, general and particular, when introduced: of what great importance it is to prevent an excess in quantity, and to extend the uses; and nearly what its value will be in any given state.

If a nation has a quantity of money equal to its commerce, the lands, commodities, and labour of the people shall bear a middle price. This state is the best, and tends most to enrich the people, and make their T_3 happines happiness lasting *. If they should mint paper to pass for money, the increase of quanrity in the former will leffen the value of the latter, will raife the price of lands and rents, and make the labour of fuch a people, and the commodities, be rated higher than in Men's fortunes will rife in other places. nominal, not real value; from whence idlenefs, expence and poverty shall follow. Under these circumstances, their real money, inftead of their commodities, shall be exported from them. Here the paper will be their bane and deftruction. But if their commerce, or uses of money, exceed the quantity of it; their lands, labour, and commodities shall fink beneath their worth in other countries. Few purchasers of lands will be found in regard to the superior profit that must attend the use of money in trade: the wealthy merchant shall be at the head of affairs: with few competitions; he shall be able to. grind down the farmer in the fale of his commodities, and, when those fail to support him, in the purchase of his lands, the artifan's labour shall be depreciated by the merchant who exports it, or the needy farmer that uses it. The wealthy only shall accumulate riches, the commonwealth shall decline, and in time farmers and artifans

* These sensible propositions, applied in this paper to the flate of a province, are well worthy the attention of the greatest flates.

4

muft

must defert the place for another, where their labour shall be better rewarded. Here the use of paper-money will shake off the fetters and clogs of the poor. Merchants will multiply; they will raife the price of labour, and of the fruits of the earth, and thereby the value of lands. An equal diftribution of gain and profit shall succeed, and deftroy the partial accumulations of wealth.

I think these marks, taken from the value of lands, labour, and commodities, compared with their worth in other countrics, will be found the only infallible rules to judge of an equality, excess, or defect of money in any place wherefoever; and confequently will, at all times, unerringly shew the neceffity of increasing coins, or the contrary. Had a neighbouring province well understood and weighed these points, they had not created a paper credit far exceeding all their uses for money, when they were able to fupply themfelves with gold equal to trade; nor at the fame time have the. dammed up fo many uses for it, which now cover them with clouds and confusion, that no man can fee his way through. The best method they can use, is to fink it as fast as poffible, and not let their fund lie in Britain at an interest less than 4 per cent. when it is worth 6 in their own country, and their **T** 4 paper

ť pauanf the ents, and an in fe in idle-Un-, inorted their tomuanmoother ll'be that the girs: le to. omport the the farhall hall fans er to n of ıuft

paper paffes 50 per cent. lefs than the nominal value. But to return: when it is found neceffary to add paper-money to the coin of any country; to fupport its value, ought to be the main and principal view. This will turn upon the FUND, the USES, and the QUANTITY.

All value arifing from the use, I beg leave to call *extrinsic*.

Having shewn that paper-money acquires its extrinsic value from the uses, which uses apparently may be encreased or diminished; I think it would be needless, and mispending the reader's time, to demonstrate, that this value must be in direct proportion to the uses; for it would really amount to no more than the proof of an axiom universally acknowledged, That the effect shall always be adequate to the cause. Therefore, in all future arguments, I shall take it for granted.

The fund ought to be as fatisfactory to mankind as human wifdom can devife and furnish.

The community should become fecurity to answer all deficiencies in the FUND; this is not only the highest justice, but the best policy. It is just, because it is a creature of their omiound n of it to will the

eave

ires ufes ed; ing this the ore acbe all for to nd

eft of

ir

their own, calculated for their private utility and advantage, and is in the management of the country by their reprefentatives and officers. But when they receive an intereft from the money, the equity of it is unanfwerable : for it feems wholly inconfistent with juffice, that one should receive the interes, and another run the risque of the principal. Policy requires it, because the community will certainly receive more profit from its credit under their support, than, with due caution, they can probably lose by accidents in the fund.

Our next confideration, with respect to the value, turns on *what* the fund is to pay, and when. These are arbitrary, being within the power of those by whose authority the money is emitted. But for the prefent purpose: let us suppose it is to pay filver money, according to the late Queen's proclamation, to the value of 1000% for fo much of the paper, as, according to the nominal value, amounts to that fum at the end of 15 years. In this state the 1000 l. paper, with regard to the fund alone, at the time of its emiflion, is worth no more proclamation money than what will produce 1000% of that money at the end of the term, at compound interest, under as good fecurity.

For

For example, take a 1000 *l*. paper, and let it reprefent that the poffeffor fhall receive 1000 *l*. proclamation money for it at the end of 15 years, and let the ufe of money be worth 6 per cent. per annum; rebate 6 per cent. per annum with compound interest for 15 years, and you have the value of the 1000*l*. proclamation money in hand, which appears to be but 417l. 5s. 3d. $\frac{1}{2}$; more it cannot be worth, because 417l. 5s. 3d. $\frac{1}{2}$; with 6 per cent. per annum compound interest for 15 years added, will amount to 1000*l*.

On this flate it appears, that the longer the term, the lefs the value, with regard to the fund alone. From whence it follows, that by increasing the term, this value may be reduced to a degree beneath estimation. But whatever the value thus proved be, I call it intrinsic.

The FUND established, I proceed to the uses, as they next require our attention in regard to the value of paper-money.

If value, in refpect to the uses of things, fhall always be in direct proportion to those uses, (which I prefume I have heretofore proved in general, and shall hereafter shew is true in relation to paper-money) and we defign to raise the power-it follows clearly, that and eive end be per for the iich e it rith for Iger t to ws, nay on.

the re-

call

ngs, nofe fore new we rly, that (283)

that to bring this to pass, *we ought to give it all the uses of money, or coined gold and filves in other countries. From these uses alone it must derive all the worth it shall bear. beyond what I called the intrinsic value. For the purpose take the cafe stated on the fund only, that the possessor of 1000 l. paper shall receive 1000 l. proclamation money in exchange for it, at the end of 15 years. On this account the paper appeared to be worth but 4171. 15s. 3d. 1. But suppose this 10001. paper may be immediately exchanged for 8001. proclamation money, which is 3321. 14s. $8d.\frac{1}{2}$ more than the intrinsic worth, how has it acquired this exceeding price or value? I think plainly from the uses. To prove the truth of this, suppose all the uses as money taken away; unquestionably then the worth of 1000% paper in proclamation money will be reduced to what I call the intrinsic value; because, depending upon the fund alone, it will be exactly in the ftate of a fund to be paid at a future day; for in neither cafe can the creditor use it in the mean time. But if the creditor can by any contrivance use the fum in that time, as he may the paper when it passes for money, that use must be something worth. And when

* This cannot be done if the individuals have tranfactions, and confequently *ufe* for this money beyond the limits of the authority of the jurifdiction of the community.—See p. 285.

experience

experience flews, that under this use the value advances from 4171. 15 s. 3d. 1 to 8001. I apprehend it is evident to a demonstration, that the difference is derived from the use. To deny it, must be as irrational and absurd. as if, upon adding and extracting an ingredient to and from a composition, we perceived properties in the composition appear and difappear, and yet were to deny that fuch ingredient was the caufe of those properties. This leads me to attempt the folution of a question I have known frequently made. If we in Penfylvania, upon a fufficient fund answerable in filver, at a future day, mint a quantity of paper equal to the uses of the people for money, and they willingly and univerfally accept of the paper in all payments, why fhould it not, at all times, have value equal to the nominal value, or to the fum chargeable on the fund at the day to come? This reason, urged by many, to fupport the paper to this degree, is drawn from the nature of money in general. Money, fay they, is but a ticket or counter, which reprefents to the mind of the possesfor a quantity or degree of power. No man, on the receipt of it, ever examines how, or from whence it acquired that power, but in order to difcover its reality and duration. For inftance, when an English crown is received, does the acceptor regard any properties in the metal, or the figures of it, but thofe

(284)

those which are to convince him that it is what it appears to be? a crown. It must be confessed, he does not. If so, then why may not a piece of paper, under distinguishing characters and impressions, affixed by law and common confent, have the power of an English crown annexed to it? It is to pass in the same manner as a crown does, and in the end will as certainly be a crown as the real one.

Therefore they conclude, that the paper may, and ought at all times, to be effcemed equal to the quantity of filver the fund is to yield for it at the end of the term.

I confess I think this reasoning fair, and the conclusion just and fatisfactory, if we do not use filver in our commerce, foreign or do-The fact is, we do *mestic*: otherwife not. use filver in our foreign commerce. I prefume it will be eafily admitted, as the paper represents the filver in the fund, and from thence obtains its credit, that it shall always be at least of equal use with, or be as readily received as paper. Then if filver in hand has one power, one use more than the paper, (to wit, that of procuring foreign commodities) it is impossible we can efteem them equally. For that would be to controul the different virtues and influences of things over the mind of man, which necessarily dependıng

vao/. ion, use. ird, greoer-)ear hat roluntly .ffiure the /il-· in es, to lay to wn 0er, lor n, or ut n. e--۳ut ſe

ing upon the things themfelves, no laws or confent can, by any means, vary or direct. Wherefore, in the cafe ftated, it feems to me certain and undeniable, that the paper must have lefs worth than the filver.

Having faid, that the uses of the paper should be as many as possible, it may be proper for me to speak of some of those uses, the equity and advantage of which have been very much controverted. *But here let it be understood, that I proceed upon the case last stated; that the quantity of paper is to be equal to all the uses of money within the country. For that state, and a partial supply of paper credit, differing in principles, require different reasoning, and infer quite opposite confequences.

First, then, it feems just and reasonable to compel all perfons contracting for filver money, after the law, that raises the paper money to be paid in the country is enacted, to receive the paper in lieu of it, and at the value struck from the fund, although that be inferior to the real value. This perhaps may not be first equity between the contracting parties, but it is just from the community, who have power from the confent of every member, by laws, to prohibit the exercise of a parti-

* Here the proposition is rightly stated and guarded.

cular

vs or rect. o me must

baper y be ules, been it be cafe is to z the fupples, quite

le to momoo reralue erior ot be ties, have ber, artiled. ular cular natural right, inconfistent with the welfare of the whole, and to inflict a penalty upon difobedience to the law. To use filver or gold with the paper, must depreciate the latter. Therefore the law forbids it. This can't be unfair, becaufe every man has notice of what coin he is to be paid in, and is not obliged to exchange more for the paper, than he thinks agreeable to the real And if any should endeavour such worth. use, the loss of the difference between gold or filver and paper, is a kind of penalty for violating the law, which must be as just as any other penalty imposed on an act, not evil in itself, but prohibited only.

Again, upon breach of contracts for payment of money in foreign countries, I think it both convenient and right, that fatisfaction The conveshould be made in the paper. nience of it will appear, if we suppose the debtor a member of the fociety amongst whom the paper passes; for as fuch, being restrained by law from trafficking for gold or filver, and thereby difabled from procuring them, he must either pay paper in compensation, or lie in a gaol, if the severity of his creditors requires it. In these circumstances, no man in his senses would dare to contract a foreign debt, or transfer foreign money in the usual manner, by exchange;

change; the bad confequences of which are too numerous and obvious to admit of, or need particular mention, and evidently prove the convenience of allowing fatisfaction to be made in paper.

The equity of this fatisfaction will be indifputable, if the debtor pays a fum of paper really of equal value with the foreign money. It is the common cafe on breach of fpecific contract. If it cannot be performed, the most exact justice requires no more than an equivalent compensation.

Some perfons imagining the real worth of the paper equal to the nominal, have affirmed, that it ought to difcharge these debts at the nominal value; others confeffing a difference between these values, under some political views, have afferted the fame. As I fhall have occafion to fpeak on thefe opinions hereafter, upon a point fimilar to this, I shall only add here, that if this mode of payment should take place, it would as effectually deftroy foreign credit and negociations by exchange, as if gold or filver were to be infifted on here, to difcharge a foreign' In one cafe, it would be the highest debt. imprudence to be the debtor; in the other, it must be equally indifcreet to become a creditor.

Purfuing

th are of, or prove on to

e inpaper moh of med; than

th of aflebts ig a ome As opihis, e of efciavere ign' heft her, e'a' ing

Purfuing the uses, I come to that of difcharging by paper, the filver debts contracted antecedent to the law that raises the paper.

To shew the necessity of admitting this, I fuppofe it will be granted me, that there must at all times be a very great number of debtors who depend on their future labour and industry to pay their debts. This dependence is reafonable and juft, founded on the natural right of all fairly to purchase filver, the then current money of the country. The debtor has the continuation of this right in view and expectation at the time of his contract; without it he cannot be fupposed either prudent or honest to borrow. If then, for the convenience and advantage of the whole fociety, this right must be taken away by a fubsequent law which he could not foresee, it cannot be agreeable either to reason or good conscience, to exact a payment in specie; for that would be requiring a performance when the law had exprefsly taken away the means. Therefore I think it clear in respect to the debtor, that the paper should have this use. But how will this stand with the right of the creditor, who upon the contract as certainly expected to be paid filver, as the debtor did the opportunity of acquiring it to pay? VOL. II. I pre-

I pretume, if he receives as much paper as fhall be equal in power or value to the. filver, it will be just in itself, and perfectly fatisfactory to him. But can any man offer to high a degree of violence to his own reason, and the understanding of others, as to affirm, if he is forced to accept lefs, that fill he has justice dispensed him? If I borrow 100%. in filver before the law, under agreement to repay it at the end of the enfuing year, and before the day of payment comes, the law takes place, commanding the lender to receive 100% paper for it, which shall be worth, or have power to procure 821. filver money only; with truth can this be called a rational or upright law? Certainly Nor fhall it be any justification to me no. in confcience to detain 187. of my creditor's money.

The rules of natural justice flowing from our fixed and unchangeable relations to each other, and the invariable nature and order of things, inforced by the express commands of God, are of eternal and indispenfible obligation. No laws, no combinations of human power, customs, usages, or practice, can controul or change them. We may, by the consent of a majority, the up the compulsory hand of the civil magistrate, and thereby diffolve the power of coercive laws; per the, Aly ffer. wn as :hat -100 ıder nfunent the nich 821. s be inly me tor's rom each rder bmen-

om, on, or We up ate, cive ws; (291)

laws; but can no more abfolve from the moral duty, than we can reverse decrees inrolled in heaven. If my debtor should be fo extremely weak, as to suppose this not criminal because it is legal, (which I think next to impossible to imagine of a rational creature, and I make bold to affirm, never was the cafe of a creditor of understanding, fufficient to know the measure of his demand) his opinion perhaps may ferve for an excuse, or extenuation of his crime, but never can prove the rectitude of the act, and ftill the guilt must rest somewhere. The law-makers, the authors of this miftake, are culpable, unlefs they are under the fame delufion; which is yet more difficult to apprehend. Some, who gave up the justice of the law, defend their practice under it, by faying, they are creditors as well as debtors : and as they are obliged to receive, fo they should have liberty to pay. Alas! what feeble arguments fatisfy, when they are caft into the fcale of interest, and gain is the confequence of conviction! If the actions of men towards us are to be the measures of our dealing with others, then he that is cheated by any person, may justly plunder the next he meets. And truly I cannot fee why it fhould ftop here; for as we may be many times defrauded, and not know it, to be fecure, and keep the ballance on the right U 2 fide.

fide, we fhould pillage our neighbours as often as an opportunity offers. This may feem fevere reafoning, but really I think it fair from the first position; that because one keeps back part of another's due, therefore he may honestly detain the right of a third innocent person.

Again, paying an equivalent cannot be injurious to the debtor. For fuppole he pays 120% paper. If 100 pounds worth of coined filver, reduced to bullion, will then yield him fo much, what does he more than perform his contract to pay 100% of coined filver? feeing a complete recompence is perfectly confiftent with the right of each contracting party. Any remaining objections muft arife from its being hurtful or injurious to the fociety in general. This has been afferted, and endeavours have been ufed to fupport the truth of it, by this kind of reafoning.

First, If the law should oblige the debtor (for the purpose) to pay 120% paper in lieu of 100% filver, the legislature would thereby confess the inferior worth of the paper; which will be attended with this ill confequence, that the general current value of the paper shall be less than if the law had declared it equal to filver.

Secondly,

rs as may nk it e one efore third

bt be pays pined yield perpercontions rious been d to rea-

btor lieu hereper; nfef, the l de-

ndly,

Secondly, That leftening the current value will be a lofs to the fociety in general. To the first, That obliging to pay a larger sum of paper for a lefs of filver, acknowledges an inequality of value under the like denominations, is felf-evident. But from thence to infer, that the paper shall pass in general, at lefs value than if they had been declared equal, with submission, I think mission, and inconclusive reasoning.

To be clearly understood, permit me to examine this upon the fact. Suppose the law, in the strongest terms, enacts that the paper shall be in value equal to filver money, according to their feveral denominations. Carry the paper from thence to use, by offering it in exchange or payment for fome commodity, and then I ask a short question, Who it is that really fets a value on the paper, the legislature, or the perfon that has the commodity to fell? If it be answered, the first, then I fay, this cannot be, unless they alfo limit the price of the commodity. For if the feller can raife and proportion the price of it to what he thinks the real worth of the paper, (the law-maker's declaration notwithstanding,) it is he that strikes the value, and not they. For inftance; put the cafe, a farmer, just upon emitting the paper, has a bushel of wheat to fell, which he rates at, U₃ and

and will not part with under * three filver shillings. The future current worth of the paper being unknown to him, let him by guess imagine these three shillings equal to four shillings paper. A purchaser then preffes him, under the influence of the law, to accept of three paper shillings for this wheat; but he, without regard to the law, according to his own opinion, demands and receives four shillings for it. Will any man fay, the legislature determined the value of the paper here? Apparently the feller did. For the legiflature commanded, that the three paper shillings should be valued at three of filver, but the farmer has made his estimate at three fourths of that value only. -Unquestionably the vender must always have this power, unlefs, as I faid before, the law-makers can limit the price of all commodities; which is not practicable, confiftent with the order of things, or the prefervation of men's properties. But it may be alledged, Although the receiver of the mo-

ney is not bound to obferve the legiflative command, yet ftill it may have fome weight. He may confider it to be the impartial opinion of the wifeft part of the fociety, what the future current value of the paper shall be, and thereby add, in some degree, to its worth.

* This, at the time when this paper was written, was the current price of wheat at Philadelphia.

In answer I must observe, first, this gives up the point of power, and changes it to a matter of mere advice. Then, fuppoling that of any import, furely delivering it in a mandatory way, will be very little able to pro+ duce the defired effect. Imperative advice (pardon the expression) favours too much of felling the rabbit, to prevail or perfuade. In short, the words command and advise, convey two ideas fo widely different, and ic opposite and repugnant to each other, that it is abfolutely impoffible we should take the first for the last. But granting it to be interpreted as a piece of cordial advice-Shall it be received implicitly, and pass without any examination? I prefume not. When it comes to be examined, if the people should be informed, that, upon a nice examination, the legislature had found a fourth, fifth, or fixth difference between filver and paper, as fuch calculations are generally out of the reach and comprehension of most people, it feems not improbable that the paper might pafs at first, agreeable to the given difference. Ι fay at first; for I contend, if the calculation should be erroneous, (which the use of the money in time will discover) this effect shall not be lasting. But if, on the contrary, they learn that the paper, without any calculation, by guess, was pronounced equal to filver, which every man's judgment, who U 4 knows

ilver the ı by al to then law. this law, and man e of did. :hree e of mate Unhave the omfiftprey be motive ght. hion fuand was In

knows the fuperior power of the laft, muft difapprove of, what influence can the legiflative advice then have? Undoubtedly it will be univerfally rejected, and each perfon turned at large to make his effimate as well as he can, without the least regard to the legiflative opinion.

Once more, Take it, that the quantity of filver in 100 shillings proclamation money is now worth 120 paper shillings in Pensylvania; and suppose this requisite had hitherto been omitted in all laws relating to the. paper; let the fupreme authority to-day enact, that from henceforth all perfons shall give as much for 100 shillings paper as they do now for that quantity of filver, would this make the least alteration in the current value of the paper? Might a man, with reason, expect to buy more bread or wine to-morrow with 100 paper shillings, than he can to-day? if the legislative power can bring this to pass, perhaps it may prove more than fome people defire; for I conjecture it will thew, that we never had any occasion for paper. Whatever quantity of filver we had amongst us, when the paper was struck, might have been extended in value proportionable to our wants, and all the bufinefs of paper-money done at once. The abfurdity of this lies open to the meanest capacity; yet

must egifly it erson well the

y of oney ifylherthe. enhall they this alue lon; orcan ing lan vill for had ck, brefs Ir-V; et

yet I aver, that to raife the value of paper by authoritative words or commands, is equally irrational and unfeafible.

I know no just means whereby mankind can give value to things, but increasing or leffening the uses or quantity. The paper derives its intrinsic worth from THE FUND, which is stable and fixed. The uses give it further value, but that shall always be in inverse proportion to the quantity. The quantity is absolutely under the direction of the legislature, but the uses not. As they are raifed, fo they must be limited, by our neceffities, and the difposition and order of things. The utmost the legislature can do, or is needful to be done, is to make the paper answer * all those uses. When they have ascertained the FUND, the uses and quantity, And the current vatheir power expires. lue, if the people receive it, flows from them by fo unavoidable and neceffary a confequence, that whatever the legislature or others will or do, (if it alters not the fund, uses, or quantity) can work no change in it in general. For a time, as long as people are ignorant, I confess it may; but when experience, that excellent mistrefs, has disclosed

* Within the limits of their jurifdiction; for it cannot answer all the uses, namely, exchange without that jurifdiction.

what

what worth they give, all imaginary value fhall ceafe and vanish, and on the three requisites, as on a folid and firm foundation, it shall ultimately rest and settle.

I conclude what I have to fay on this point with a short observation. That all the attempts of affemblies in America in this way, even by penalties on difobedience, have proved fruitless and abortive. And it has been extremely remarkable, that although transgreffing the law, by making a difference between filver and paper, has been every day's practice; not in fecret, but openly; I have never heard, that any perfon has been fo much as questioned publicly, or has loft any degree of reputation privately, for doing it. So far do the dictates of just and right reason, surpass and transcend the force and power of any human device or inflitution, that oppofes or contradicts them.

I come now to confider the fecond pofition; That leffening the current value will be difadvantageous to the fociety in general.

This cannot be maintained without proving, that it will occasion a loss, or obstruct some gain.

A fociety can gain but two ways; from the earth, and from their neighbours. When I fay fay from the earth, I do not mean from her fimple productions only; for I include therein men's labour and manufactures upon them afterwards: and they can lofe only by the contrary, neglecting the fruit and product of the earth, and fuffering their neighbours to carry away their wealth.

I prefume it will be very hard to fhew, how a different valuation of the money can influence the industry of the land-holder or the artifan.

Upon the quantities of the fruits of the earth, and manufactures produced, entirely depend the wealth of the country. A farmer and tradefinan, for a certain portion of their commodities one year, receive 8 shillings, and with them can purchase an ounce The money being raifed in value of filver. next year, they can get but 7 shillings for the fame quantities; but still that fum will buy an ounce of filver. Can this difference, in the value of the paper, cause the one to till the more or lefs ground, or the other to make a greater or lefs quantity of his manufacture? What is it to them how the money is rated, if they receive and part with it at the fame value? Gold, comparing quantity to quantity, is more valuable than filver. If filver was to vanish out of the world.

reon,

his the :his ave has ıgh nce ery ; I een loft ing ght nd þn, fibe Vct

> ne I

١Ÿ

world, and gold fhould be made the only medium of commerce, can any one imagine that mankind would grow more industrious to procure it, because more valuable than filver, when the quantity they shall get must be proportionably lefs? Do we in fact find these different effects from gold or filver at present? I think we may as reasonably expect, that varying the measure of the bussel or yard, will induce people to make more or lefs corn or cloth; as that changing the value of the money, which is another kind of measure for commodities, should excite or abate men's diligence to raife and make them.

All gain from our neighbours must be by getting their money or their goods. Thefe are to be acquired only by conquest or com-The first I pass over as impertinent merce. to this purpose. Then let us see whether advancing the value of the money can reflect any gain to us from them in the latter. Gain in trade may be confidered as derived from the manner or the measure of it. The manner of trade in general is of short circuit, and confifts of importing foreign money or commodities, and the exportation of our own. In these negotiations we shall find the worth of the paper affords us no advantage over; or an opportunty to get from our neighbours. -Sup-

Suppose a foreigner imports 800% proclamation money, and finding That not the medium of our c .nmerce, proposes to exchange it for paper. Let the value of the paper be fuch, that he can get but 800 /. of it for his filver. With the paper he purchafes corn, which he transports. What have we got from this foreigner? 800% in filver. Should we have got lefs had he received 1000 l. for his filver, and with it bought the fame quantity of wheat? Certainly no. Neither cafe makes us richer or poorer than the other; and the fame confequence will be found to attend all foreign imports whatever.

When we export our commodities, the value of the paper is quite out of the queftion; for in their fales, or the returns, it is in no fort concerned. If we fend the paper abroad, and fell it, unless it be kept in expectation of what the fund will yield for it at the end of the term (which I intend to speak to hereafter) we shall find it but an exchange of merchandizes between us and For the feller brings the goods he them. receives here, and the buyer, by means of the money, carries back our goods; the paper is but a measure, as it was in the cafe of imports and exports in return; and if it be rated alike abroad and at home, no lofs

nly ine ous han uft ind at exhel ore the ind cite iake ; by

hefe ment her lect ain om anuit, or vn. rth or

ib-

lofs or gain can enfue to either country, or to the traders, from a high or low valuation of it.

He that is not fatisfied by these reasons, may perhaps be convinced by the experience of others. The coins of England being finer than those of Holland, quantity to quantity, are of more value; but was it ever thought the Engliss had therefore more power or traffick, to obtain the money and merchandize of other nations, than the Dutch?

Were it poffible that the profit of trade could be affected by lowering the coin, that cunning and fkilful generation would hardly have debafed theirs by defign, much lefs have continued for fo long a time as they have done. * The paper-currency of New England, by a great excefs in the quantity, is funk to a fhameful degree. From hence we hear of much fraud and difhonefty amongft them; but it was never yet objected that it injured them in trade. In truth, if it had, as they principally fubfift by com-

* These facts must be referred to the time in which this treatife was written, twenty years ago. —— These evils have been remedied by the acts of parliament reftraining the affemblies from making their money a legal tender.

merce,

, or tion

ons, nce ing ' to it it ore and the

ade hat dly lefs ley ew ty, nce ſty ted if nich eſe ent ' a

e,

(303)

merce, they must have been ruined and tindone long ago.

The currencies of North and South Carolina are in the fame condition; but still their trades go on as usual, without the least alteration. In respect to the measure of our commerce, it is evident that cannot be impaired by reducing the value of our money, unlefs we are thereby deprived of a fufficient quantity to carry it on : for instance, if 60,000% proclamation money be neceffary to carry on all our trade, and we strike 60,000%. paper, in hopes it shall have the value, upon experience it proves worth but 50,000% proclamation. Then, for want of the remaining 10,000 l. fome of the wheels of trade must stand still or move flower, which apparently will obstruct a part of our gain. But the impediment vanishes, by raising an additional fum of paper equal to the 10,000%. deficiency. The power of doing this we have hitherto enjoyed and exercifed without any restraint; and probably shall retain as long as we use it with diferentian and prudence.

Seeing then, that by raifing the value of our money, we are not likely to get any thing from our neighbours, let us now try whether by lowering it they can get any thing from us.

7

I prefume I have proved, that in com**us**. mon commerce, receiving and returning the money for merchandizes, they cannot ; confequently no method remains, but keeping the money to receive filver from the fund at the end of the term. By these practices they can gain from us only upon one fuppolition; that they purchase the money at lefs than what I call the intrinfic worth : for if at more they lofe by it, and we gain from them. I have flewn, rating interest at 6 per cent. per annum, that 1000 l. payable at the end of 15 years, is worth 500% (to take a round fum) in hand. If our neighbour can buy it for 400%. he gets 100%. But on the contrary, if he gives from us. 8001. for it, he lofes 3001. For he lends us 800 for 15 years, at 21. 8 s. per cent. per annum, when it is really worth 61. and the difference, which on computation will be found in the whole to amount to 300 l. or nearly, we gain from him. But neither of these cases can possibly happen, while men have the least capacity to difcern and preferve their own interest. Indeed I have never heard one found reafon, either moral or political, for this manifest deviation from juftice and equity. So far is it from good policy, that if I am not mistaken, it must work an effect contrary to the defign; and inftead

instead of supporting the credit of the paper, undermine and diminish it.

The public authority is guarantee for the payment of all just debts. Every body must agree, that the value of paper money is nothing but fo much public credit. Now, is it possible for the public authority to break its own engagements, in respect of the payment of the debts, without in fome degree blafting that credit which is to be the fupport of the money? Public and private faith are, in this respect, exactly alike; and it is as easy to fee how violating one public obligation shall impair the value of the paper-money; as how a known breach of private contract in a goldsmith should lessen the worth of his bills or notes.

A fecond inconvenience attending it, is lofs of foreign credit, which must be a great misfortune to a trading country. This is occasioned in the same manner, by which I just now shewed the value of the money might be affected; and let it not be thought amiss that 1 mention a third inconvenience, namely, profituting and debating the dignity and excellence of the divine and moral laws in the eyes of the people, and encouraging them, by ill practices and examples, to depart from true honesty and virtue. For Vol. II. X if

mthe oning l at ices upr at th: ain reft ay-0%. our 01. ives nds per the . be or of hen rve ver b0uſ-0uft Ind ad

if a man can once believe, he may juftly, by human authority, tranfgrefs these laws, he lofes much of the due and neceffary refpect that ought to be paid them, and shall afterwards be able to refift their checks and admonitions with greater ease and facility : and he that owes to 20 people, and pays them with five fixths of their due, and sees his neighbour do the like, under colour of law to-day, will, I am afraid, with less regret and compunction, defraud his creditors without a law to-morrow.

But now, granting that intire recompence ought to be made, it may be asked how the quantum of paper to be paid, for antecedent filver debts, shall be ascertained.

The legiflature cannot fettle it with exact juffice, becaufe no fkill can difcover what the future current value fhall be; and if the people are left to do it themfelves, it will introduce many law-fuits and oppreffions, and ftill they may be as far from right as if the legiflature had done it. The greater inconveniences in the latter, rationally determine the power to the former. When they come to exercife it, if it is the first experiment of the kind, I imagine they can do little more than guess at the value. But as it is within demonstration, that the paper cannot be equal , by , he lpect fterl adand them s his law egret vith-

v the

exact at the f the l inand f the conmine come nt of more ithin t be iqual equal to filver, furely it ought not to be rated fo. Impartiality requires the guefs to be as near as may be, and then, although it may be miftaken upon the laws of change, it may be perfectly equal, becaufe either party may lofe or gain. It is a common cafe in life, and must be always fo in untried things; and no man can justly complain of the event, becaufe all errors are owing to our weaknefs, not our faults,

If any of our neighbours have iffued paper-money, the value of theirs will afford us ftrong lights to difcover the worth of our own, and allowing for different circumftances, we ought to rate ours as they have found theirs upon trial. But when experience has taught us the true worth of the money, all difficulty ends, and whatever debts or pre-contracts remain (as many from their growing nature muft) flould be fatiffied according to that value.

I have now run through all the uses that occur to me worthy of observation; and therefore shall proceed to the quantity.

When it is defigned, that paper shall be the only money of a country, the quantity, according to the nominal value, ought to be, as near as possible, adequate to the uses, or or in other words, to all commerce, foreign and domeftic. It is easier to see the truth of this rule in fpeculation, than to reduce it to practice : because the number and extent of the uses of money, in a populous and industrious country, are far beyond our knowledge and comprehension. From the circumstances of other places, the quantity of money current before iffuing the paper, and the value of their exports, rational conjectures may be formed, but experience alone can teach us what fum will fuffice. To ftrike the neceffary quantity at once, would be most advantageous to the fociety, and equal with respect to individuals; but as that cannot be known, let it be approached as near as may be. And fince we may expect to err, I prefume it will be better to err on the fide of deficiency than excess, feeing additions are eafy, but fubstractions oftentimes very difficult after the emiffion.

(308)

F I N I S.

